



REALMS IN THE FIRMAMENT

BOOK 05

Fengling Tianxia

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Realms In The Firmament

(天域苍穹)

by

Fengling Tianxia

(风凌天下)

Synopsis

Ye Xiao was a superior cultivator in his previous life. The three factions of the realm kill millions of people every time they attempt to seize cultivation resources. Wealthy towns turn to wastelands in just a single night. They cover up their crime with an assertion that the towns were suffering from pestilence and disasters.

They forcibly hold all the resources for cultivation, monopolize all valuable practice materials, and keep outsiders from cultivating so that only their three factions could cultivate in the realm. Ye Xiao declared war against the three factions in retaliation for their actions. He fought alone and ended up dying in vain. However, he is reborn into the mortal body of a 16-year-old boy. He will use the powers he cultivated in his last life and slaughter his way back into the Realm. The story begins!

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Rain @ [Qidian International](#)

Translation Edits by Chrissy / Arch @ [Qidian International](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 401: You Old Man!

Master Bai smiled. He threw a space ring to Ye Xiao and said, "Here. There are materials that are enough to make a thousand stoves of Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan. Let's assume it is three dan beads per stove, then if you succeed in every stove, it will be three thousand dan beads in total."

He half closed his eyes and smiled. "And I will only take three. That is enough for me."

Ye Xiao widely opened his eyes and said, "Three thousand dan beads? You only need three of them? How generous. My god you are really so generous. But you don't really think that I can succeed every time, right? You talked like I will take two thousand and nine hundred ninety-seven dan beads from you... I mean, Old Bai..."

"I am not an expert in dan-making. I know it is a tough job... Old Bai? What did you call me? Old Bai?" Master Bai frowned. Apparently, he felt teased about it.

"Yes, I call you Old Bai. You are aged. I think it is reasonable to call you Old Bai, right?" Ye Xiao looked at Master Bai, who was too young and handsome, and humphed.

"I am aged? Old Bai?" Master Bai frowned. He seemed upset.

Master Bai had always been casual and indifferent. Ye Xiao saw him being upset, so he suddenly felt so good about it.

[This guy really love to be a handsome man. That is unexpected!]

"I am being so kind not to call you old bastard. You are an old man! Whoever have clear eyes know it!" Ye Xiao said fiercely. And then he grabbed the space ring with the one thousand stoves of materials in hand.

He scanned it with his spiritual mind and felt so comfortable about it.

There were so many good stuffs inside. They were all superior quality.

In fact, it didn't need to use all the precious materials to make that dan. For example, the White Hair Ginseng, thirty years old ginseng would work well. However, the ginsengs in the space ring were all so high-grade, which had already fructified ginseng fruit and turned into human shape. Ye Xiao reckoned that it must be over a thousand years old.

The other materials were all in superior level. There was no any normal materials in it!

For medical materials, one year old ginseng was ginseng, while a thousand years old ginseng was also ginseng...

However, they had totally different efficacies.

Ye Xiao only scanned it through and then just left it there. [Humphed. It is difficult to make Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan indeed. Now the materials he offers are all super high-quality. It must be even harder to succeed. It may be times more difficult than usual, I guess.]

However, he didn't really care about the difficulties. He didn't need to do it himself anyway.

"Old bastard... Old man..." Master Bai couldn't let it go. He was upset and then felt a bit angry all of a sudden. He said, "Feng Monarch, your language makes me feel hoarse. Don't you have any vigor and elegance of a superior master cultivator?"

"Hmm?" Ye Xiao finally found the weakness in this legendary figure. He shouldn't have such a weak point.

His weak point was actually the same as a woman. He didn't like others call him old! He love to be young and pretty!

He cared so much about his appearance!

"Beauties and heroes, they all don't want to get old." Ye Xiao sighed.

Master Bai frowned and glared.

"Good advices yet harsh to the ear. Good medicine tastes bitter..." Ye Xiao was moving the space ring in his hand. "You talked like

making supreme dan beads are like swallowing vegetables. One thousand materials... Three thousand dan beads... Big talk. Let me be honest with you, I got the recipe of Heaven Seizing Dan by coincidence. I have never made any before. I have confidence that I can make it. I want to challenge this legendary dan myself. It is an opportunity and a challenge in my dan-making career."

"The materials you gave me, I am afraid the first thirty percent would be used as experiment. It tests the way I make this dan. The next thirty percent should be used to adjust my dan-making method. Another thirty percent afterwards should be used to test the combination of the materials. Half of the rest will be ruined in the explosion of the stove, I guess! Optimistically speaking, there may be fifty percent chance to succeed in the last ten times. Well, it may be the legendary Heaven Seizing Dan though... In other word, it is a god given good luck if I can make two stoves Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan out of the one thousand!"

"There is another thing... We are all smart men. Let's just be frank. Even if I do successfully make two stoves, I will have to endure dan punishment twice... If I suffer it twice, I will be torn into ashes... That means, there will only be one stove left! Even if I can make a second one, I will have to give it up!"

Ye Xiao glared at Master Bai and gritted with his teeth. "Old Bai, you are good at doing math! There is only one stove of dan, and it will be no more than three dan beads! You are taking them all, leaving me nothing. And you actually acted like I am going to take a big advantage of you. Is it the elegance and vigor of a superior master cultivator you said?"

Master Bai rubbed the nose and bitterly smiled. "Is that so? I know very little about dan-making. I really have no idea."

"You have no idea! You dare say you know nothing about it!" Ye Xiao was furious. "Cut the bullsh*t. If you really don't know anything about it, you wouldn't have said the number 'three'! We are both smart men. Why are you playing fool to me? What for?"

Master Bai could only bitterly smiled.

[I would only need to give an order and he will be smashed into a pile of meat. Now, he actually dare to be furious on me and shout at me... Does he know what death means?]

"Considering the quality of the materials you gave me, to use one dan bead that is made from those materials has reached the limitation already. It is only wasting it to use more!" Ye Xiao was angry. "The only one stove that will succeed, I guess it will be a great fortune to keep two of the three. It is a supreme dan bead that brings dan punishment after all. Don't tell me you don't know it. I don't trust you... By the way, it is possible that I will waste the one thousand portions of materials. There is a eighty percent chance to all fail. I think I should tell you everything that is possible. I don't want to listen to your nonsense after this. You know this, don't you?"

Master Bai bitterly smiled.

Surely he did.

Otherwise, how would he prepare materials for one thousand stoves of dan!

To make supreme dan beads was already difficult like reaching the sky. To make Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan was much more difficult than that. It could be a miracle!

[The materials I prepared for him... If he truly can successfully make a stove of it... He must be a splendid master dan-maker and also a man with unbelievable good luck...]

...

Chapter 402: Punched!

Looking at Feng Zhiling getting more and more unbridled and emotional, Master Bai was speechless. He felt disgraced.

It was his first time in his life to be shouted at like this, being complained and scolded.

[Does he have iron guts...]

He couldn't betray his conscience and lie about it, so he didn't know how to respond!

Master Bai he was, firm and persistent he was. As Ye Xiao said, he was an old monster who had lived for god knows how long. After a while, he became casual and peaceful again, "Feng Monarch, why so aflame. As I said, I don't know much about dan-making. It is only an idea to take three dan beads. It is the most optimistic idea. If things doesn't go well, nobody can do anything about it, right? After all, with your limited capability, it is still a question without answer whether you can make Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan after all."

"Are you questioning my capability of dan-making?" Ye Xiao raged. He glared at Master Bai fiercely.

All of a sudden, he came up with a bodacious idea. [He is a real cripple now after all... If I punch him up, he wouldn't be able to fight back...]

This bastard has created such a huge disturbance. I have been terribly troubled all these days... Now that I have this wonderful chance, if I don't seize it and punch him hard, the anger is going to stay in my chest...

I can't punch him to death though. It will cause the reverse counterattack from his spiritual qi inside him.

It should be okay to just make some flesh wounds, right?

As long as I don't use any true power and only punch him with normal people's strength, it will only give him a few flesh wounds. It won't activate the spiritual qi inside him!]

The idea was like fire spreading in his mind since it came up. He couldn't stop thinking about it.

Apparently, Master Bai didn't realize that the man in front of him actually wanted to punch him just because he didn't feel good about the conversation. After all, he hadn't had talked to somebody like this for a long time. He didn't realize that there could be someone that bodacious. He wouldn't believe that Feng Zhiling would start a fight after knowing how powerful he was!

He smiled and said, "Because I don't have too much confidence on you, I prepared that amount of materials. I was thinking, maybe you need to practice several times. If you succeed, you succeed; if you don't, well... Anyway, it seems I have prepared less than we need... I guess I should prepare ten times more. That may

be better..."

"Surely, I am not depreciating you. You see. I am just telling the truth. I just try to take precaution. Maybe you will fail with all ten thousand portions of materials. That is also possible. You understand me, right? So, just take these materials, and I will ask Wan-Er to gather more materials for you. There are still days before the end of the deal. It is long enough to collect more materials..."

Master Bai smiled and talked. Apparently, he was trying to offend Feng Zhiling because he shouted at him so rudely. Ye Xiao liked to humiliate Master Bai, and in fact, Master Bai also enjoyed humiliating Ye Xiao.

Master Bai didn't know... When he said that, a huge fist was hitting on his face!

"How dare you look down upon me! How dare you look down upon my capability of dan-making!"

Ye Xiao shouted the reasons why he started the fight and jumped over to Master Bai.

- Puff! -

Master Bai had never thought that this man would go wild like this.

He got a firm fist hit on the face. He was shocked and then furiously shouted, "You..."

"How dare you look down upon me! How dare you look down upon my dan-making!" Ye Xiao punched again fiercely. And then his fists didn't stop. It was like storm rain hitting on Master Bai's face.

- Bang, bang! - Two sounds, the handsome Master Bai became a flesh made panda, and then he was turning more and more like a pig head!

He finally got an excuse to righteously punch this guy. He wouldn't stand on scruples. He actually got on Master Bai riding him. They were both on that wheelchair at the moment. Ye Xiao punched again and again, left and right...

- Puff, puff, puff. -

Master Bai was truly astonished.

He had never thought about being punched like this. He was angry but confused. All that he could think of was, [He is punching me... He punches me... He dares to punch me... How dare him...]

- Puff! -

A heavy punch on him caused his face to be compressed. He was no more a handsome man.

- Puff! -

Another punch on him, his face came back but looked really like a pig head.

- Puff! -

This time, Master Bai fell backward on the floor.

- Puff, puff, puff... -

Ye Xiao kept punching on him. Every fist was solid and firm. He was so vigorous at the moment. He was thrilled, excited, and passionate. All these words couldn't even describe one ten-thousandth of how he felt good. Anyway, it was so good!

He had been punching over a hundred times.

Master Bai was not the only one who was shocked. Even the guards hidden in the shadow were shocked!

They couldn't believe it!

They had never seen anybody who dared to be so rude to their master for so many years.

Even though there had been some ignorant people who had tried to mess with him, he always had Wan and Xiu around him. No matter what conversation he had, he would allow Wan and Xiu to be with him. He never kept any secrets from them.

However, this time, Wan of Clouds and Xiu of Heavens were both not around him!

Then... their master got punched!

[What the hell is this?!]

After a while, in fact, after an instant, Master Bai looked emotionally at Ye Xiao and blew on Ye Xiao lightly.

It hit Ye Xiao's face directly.

At this moment, the guards were all back to themselves. They rushed out fiercely shouting with anger.

There were eight of them.

- Hoo! -

Ye Xiao only felt that he was flying away like he was riding a piece of cloud. He then fell to the floor heavily. His ass first hit the floor. He felt like his ass was hit into eight pieces. He was shocked.

[What is that? How come I just flew out like this?]

When he looked up, he saw eight big guys staring at him fiercely. They were all covered by aura of killings. The aura of killings was nearly formed into something solid, howling around Ye Xiao.

...

Chapter 403: Swagger Off!

If he took any reckless moves, the aura of killings would attack him. With his current capabilities, he wouldn't need Master Bai to fight directly against him, but only the eight masses of the killing aura could rip him apart!

Ye Xiao half closed the eyes looking at the eight men carefully!

The eight of them were all vigorous. They just stood there like iron towers.

They stood there and didn't move a bit!

Eight Sky Origin Stage master level cultivators!

Ye Xiao rolled his eyes. He realized that he was watching one of Master Bai's ace cards in this world!

Let alone Wan of Clouds and Xiu of Heavens, these eight guys were strong enough to help Master Bai destroy the world thoroughly!

Wan and Xiu were both massively strong, but they were restrained after all. They could barely use one ten-thousandth of their real power. These eight men were absolutely the most powerful force in the Land of Han-Yang. In this world, there barely was anybody who could threaten them!

How powerful force it was behind Master Bai?

Except these eight men, did he have other Sky Origin Stage master level cultivators?

Ye Xiao knew that people like Master Bai would never show what he really had to others. What he showed to people must be just a tiny part of the truth.

"Master!" One of the eight men held his fists with anger. "Pray order! We will smash this bodacious bastard into meat paste!"

Master Bai was holding his face. His eyes were beaten so hard that they were now in a shape of two lines. On his face, there was no part of it that was fine. All that could be seen on his face was blue and green. His head was swollen. He was exactly like a pig head!

However, he just sat there casually like he hadn't been punched.

Even though he was covered with wounds and his face was swollen, he only showed people his elegance. People would just ignore all those flaws on him.

Nobody would care about the swollen parts on him. They would just ignore them.

Master Bai stared at Feng Monarch, who was embarrassedly sitting on the floor, through his half-closed eyes, sharp and bright.

After a while, he laughed.

"Hahahaha..."

While he laughed, he shook the head. He nearly laughed to the point of crying

He was so delightful and laughing, and he didn't seem angry at all. His perfect self-image was ruined again though. He acted like he had just been to something that he had to celebrate!

In fact, what happened to him should make him furious.

"Feng Monarch is truly bodacious!" Master Bai said so after laughing for a long time.

And then he was silent before saying, "Send him out."

He turned around looking at Ye Xiao and blandly smiled, "Feng Monarch, we will meet again."

He actually just let go of the truth that he had just been punched hard.

He acted like it had never happened.

The eight superior cultivators were all shocked. [What did

Master say? Just let this bastard, who has just beaten him up, leave safely?]

Ye Xiao was surprised too. [You actually don't want to beat me back?]

He wouldn't so surprised if Master Bai asked the men to beat him up hard, or beat him up with his own hands. He was just so surprised that Master Bai just set him free!

[Does he have special habits? He loves to be punched?]

Master Bai said blandly, "Feng Monarch, please, don't die in others' hand in this chaos."

Ye Xiao laughed. "Surely not. Those useless scumbags? They want to kill me. They better do it in their dreams. They can never..."

Master Bai showed a smile that felt like spring water in his eyes. He casually spoke, "Maybe I can ask people to do things for me because of hatred or my plan or something else."

"But, this one," he touched his own face, which was swollen, casually said, "this is what really happened on myself. I have to do it myself. If you die before I recover to my real capability, I will be rather disappointed. It will make my decision now become pointless."

Ye Xiao laughed. "I won't let you down on this! See you!"

He stood up and then swaggered off. He looked so casual, happy and he didn't seem nervous at all.

The threat from the most powerful man in the word did not disturb him at all.

Master Bai watched him leave. Looking at his back, he smiled again.

Ye Xiao disappeared in the bamboo forest.

"This guy... He truly doesn't care..." Master Bai touched his swollen face and blandly said, "It has been such a long time that I haven't been punched..."

The eight guys all knew well about their master. They heard him only to feel covered by goosebumps.

[This Feng Monarch did something because of his anger. He will end up real nasty in Master's hands!]

"Master, there is a group of assassins thirteen miles outside the mountain." The man who was the head of the eight said, "There are a lot of them. They are not just in ordinary levels. Feng Zhiling just left. He will have to encounter those assassins. He is weak. I guess he will fail to defend from those people."

He seemed to remind Master Bai.

[Do you want this Feng Zhiling to die? I guess not. Do you want to protect him then?

You need him to make those dan beads for you after all. This is the most important thing...]

Master Bai blandly smiled, "He doesn't need me to worry about his life. Hmm. Andy, you should go check on it, but don't get involved. If he can defend himself, you won't need to show yourself. If he gets killed, you bring me back whatever he took away from here. Our things can not get into others' hands so easily."

"Okay."

The big guy moved and then left, flying in the sky like a hawk.

Master Bai looked down. His hairs were hanging measurably. He looked at his palm and said, "That silly girl didn't do anything stupid after all... Wan and Xiu should be back now. Ah. If they see me with this embarrassed look, they must feel pain in hearts..."

In his voice, it was relief.

[Feng Zhiling, if you don't die today, I will lift the curtain in the

chaos of the capital! I am willing to see how you can find a way to life in such a messy and desperate situation!"

...

Chapter 404: Set Up!

"You beat me. How can you beat me without taking the responsibility. I surely will make some extra troubles for you. It is not that easy to take advantage of me." Master Bai showed indifference on his face.

...

Ye Xiao walked out to the mountain. He was thrilled and a bit terrified after the astonishment.

He was not terrified about the consequence of what he had done. He was sure that before he successfully made the Heaven Seizing Dan, Master Bai would never kill him.

What had happened there was because Master Bai had done something unreasonable. Ye Xiao just beat him because of anger. He didn't want to kill Master Bai after all. Master Bai wouldn't want to kill him either. The reason why he was terrified was Master Bai's real power.

Master Bai was restrained by the divine punishment, so he couldn't use his real power. However, he had only blown on Ye Xiao's face, and the moment it Ye Xiao, he actually flew away. If Master Bai was free from the restraint, it would just be a piece of cake to kill Ye Xiao. That was a horrible truth to Ye Xiao. If he didn't experience it himself, he wouldn't even believe it!

It was impossible not to be terrified after knowing Master Bai's

true power!

He was just feeling a bit terrified though, because he had another much stronger feeling. He held the fists and he could still feel the pleasure of punching Master Bai. Ye Xiao laughed and murmured, "I don't care how world shocking you will be after you are free from the restraint. You are now nothing but a cripple... When I come next time, I will find another chance to beat you up! I would like to take some risk to experience that wonderful pleasure!"

At this moment, Ye Xiao had reached a corner.

He stopped, because he clearly heard that there was a group of people moving fast over to him.

He stopped at the crossing. The first thing in his mind was to change his appearance. He was Feng Zhiling at the moment. Feng Zhiling was enemy to everybody in the world.

It would be a sure thing that he got recognized.

Whoever recognized him, there must be a ninety-nine percent chance that they want to kill him!

The reward for his death was too attractive. Every man wanted to take his life now!

However, when he just tried to operate his martial art, he was stunned.

His face was like an iron plate; he couldn't move a bit.

It stuck there.

He couldn't even change his facial expression, let alone change his appearance.

"What is it?" He was shocked. He usually activated the key area of the face with his spiritual power. He was experienced. He didn't make any mistakes about it. What happened to him then?

Ye Xiao started thinking. He thought about everything that happened after he changed his face the last time. It reminded him when he was punching Master Bai, Master Bai blew on his face.

[Could it be... that it did more than just blowing me away with that breath?

Hmm. Must be... I don't feel right about my face since then. I thought I was just blown too hard by him...

Now I cannot change my appearance because of that too?

He actually has such a powerful skill?!]

That was obvious.

Master Bai knew that Feng Zhiling would have to change appearance because he needed to escape from the hunt, so he set him up in advance.

"Holy sh*t! That cunning old bastard! He is a thousand years old goddamn fox! Within just a few seconds, he has made such a huge trouble to me!" Ye Xiao angrily cursed.

Master Bai had really made a fierce hit on Ye Xiao. He forced Ye Xiao to remain as Feng Zhiling. In other words, Ye Xiao didn't know after how long before he could change his appearance and stop being hunted by those assassins!

That was no joke!

What to do now? The horse steps were sounding closer and closer. As he went further off the corner, he would reach a plain field. There would be nowhere for him to hide...

Ye Xiao looked back and helplessly sighed. He stayed close to the mountain.

Luckily, there was a shoal hollow on it. He could just hide right there...

If those men kept moving in the same speed on the horses, they would just pass this place very quickly. [Well, they may not be assassins to take my life.] That was just an extravagant hope...

Ye Xiao then held the breath.

He was staying close to the mountain.

The sound of horses running was getting closer and closer like thunder.

The group of people were just about to get pass by...

"Feng Zhiling! Where are you going? You head is a five billion head! Stay still, you!" At the moment, an extremely cold voice shouted.

Ye Xiao was shocked by the voice. [Who the fxck is shouting? You get the fxck out and I guarantee you will die quick!]

The group of people apparently heard it.

It was such an attractive and thrilling shout!

Five billion was a number no one could resist!

"Hold..."

It sounded like they were all stopping the horses. The horse steps sounded sloppily. Meanwhile, a few figures flew over like giant

birds. They had searched around this area just within minutes.

And then all of them were looking at Ye Xiao, who was hiding on the mountain.

- Shoot, shoot, shoot. -

Over a dozen more figures flew up to the sky. They didn't know what exactly happened yet, but they had already occupied the highest points in this place.

The entire area was under their control now!

Apparently, they were a well trained team of assassins who had great experience!

The man in front of them looked at Ye Xiao. In his eyes, there was delight.

And then he took out a paper from inside his clothes.

He opened that paper with confusion. And then, he became wild with joy!

"Feng Monarch! We have been looking for you for so long..." The man's narrow eyes showed a smile of joy. He acted like he had discovered some buried treasure. He bowed with respect and saluted as he spoke, "Finally, we meet each other... Feng Monarch

of Ling-Bao Hall."

He looked at Ye Xiao like looking at a mountain of gold!

It must be a huge mountain that broke through the clouds and reached to heavens!

...

Chapter 405: God Slayer Team!

[I just need to cut that man's head and take it back. It is not just about mission completed. It is about me getting six billion in my pocket!

Six! Billion!

Me and all my ancestors have never seen such an amount of money!

My children and the children of my children can just lie there all their lives and eat till the end of the world...]

Ye Xiao was speechless.

[So they got me?!

So I am sold!]

Ye Xiao didn't really see the person who shouted and brought those men to him. However, he knew it by thinking with his knees that he must be Master Bai's people!

"Cunning shameless old bastard!" Ye Xiao cursed, "I just beat you up a little bit. Do you have to do this to me..."

And then he casually walked out from where he was hiding,

casually walked down into the encirclement.

He looked at the slim middle-aged man standing in front. He smiled and blandly said, "Who is this? I don't think I have ever met you before. As I can remember, you shouldn't be from Kingdom of Chen. Am I right?"

The middle-aged man was so slim. Ye Xiao was 1.8 meter tall. That man was a head taller than him. He was about two meters!

His pupils were singing a blue glow. He must be a Sky Origin Stage cultivator.

His eyes were narrow, nearly reaching the temples. Slim body, narrow eyes, tall Sky Origin Stage cultivator, Ye Xiao had never heard about him.

"Feng Monarch, you are right. I am not from Kingdom of Chen. If I am, how could you not know me?"

The middle-aged man smiled politely. He said, "I am from Kingdom of Tianyu. My name is Ji Mengzhan. I think you must have heard about my name."

He smiled. "I am not people of Kingdom of Chen, and I am not as rich as Feng Monarch. However, the name Ji Mengzhan must be well-known in Land of Han-Yang."

"Ji Mengzhan?" Ye Xiao shook the head and disdainfully spoke,

"Where does this nobody come? I haven't heard of such name ever!" He smiled. "I do remember names of men, but never names of garbages."

Ji Mengzhan was furious. He blushed because of anger. "Feng Monarch is an important figure. You are a busy man. Maybe you haven't heard about my name. However, when you die in my hands later and I chop your head down, you will never forget my name even in your next life!"

Ye Xiao blandly smiled. "Kill me? A garbage? Do you really think so?"

Ji Mengzhan raged and shouted, "Kill him! Take this gold mountain down for me!"

Ye Xiao's head was a gold mountain in his eyes now!

It was a gold mountain that was so close to him!

Ye Xiao naturally had heard of Ji Mengzhan.

He wasn't just a small figure!

Ye Xiao humiliated him for a reason though!

The reason was simple. That man was totally nuts!

His father was the Prime Minister of Kingdom of Tianyu.

Ji Mengzhan was an only son, however, he hated politics and literature. As he grew older, he became more brutal. He was very emotional, and he was cruel.

He loved killing. He never let his enemy die quick. Even when he could just kill someone by just one strike, he wouldn't do it that way. He would like to torture people to death.

To be his enemy was a terrible thing. He would catch you, cut you, keep you staying conscious and kill your families, rape your women and then kill you at last!

That was some extreme painful course!

However, the king of Kingdom of Tianyu liked him, so he assigned him on an important job—the leader of the Tianyu God Slayer Team!

God Slayer Team of Kingdom of Tianyu was the official assassination group.

It only reported to the king of Kingdom of Tianyu only!

That was some enormous power!

What Ji Mengzhan had done was to investigate his own father...

He put his father in jail with some accusations!

He got every evidence though. When a son wanted to know the secret of his father, it wouldn't be difficult.

However, he had made up some evidence. Those evidences he made up were the ones that truly put his father in jail.

His own son actually made up something to put him into jail...

It was unbelievable that there was actually such a son in the world!

The evidences he made up were persuasive. Everybody believed it. After all, he knew well about his own father. Evidence he made would look exactly like real...

A son persecuting his father was a tragedy, however, it was not that offbeat.

Something that was offbeat was that he actually tortured his own father. He tortured his own father till death stopped him. He did everything himself. It lasted seven full days before his father died!

That was some terrifying truth!

Everybody was shocked. That was why his name was well-known

in the world.

He had shocked the whole world!

That was why Ye Xiao called him garbage.

Whoever could put his own father into jail and torture him to death, no matter how bad his father was, this son must be frenzied and inhumane!

He must be a scumbag!

A complete scumbag!

...

As Ji Mengzhan shouted, five men glowing yellow jumped over to Ye Xiao.

They were all cold faces, no expressions.

They were all Earth Origin Stage cultivators!

It was the distinction of the God Slayer Team to be expressionless on their faces. Strong or weak, alive or dead, they showed nothing on the face. They didn't make sounds either. That was the identification of them.

Even if they were in disguised dresses, when they fought, they could be recognized!

They were the force of Kingdom of Tianyu that Kingdom of Lanfeng and Kingdom of Chen feared the most!

Every man in this team was shameless, and they fought with desperation!

...

Chapter 406: Five Killed!

Most importantly, everyone in that team was superior cultivators!

It was said that the weakest one in their team was at Earth Origin Stage.

The leaders were all Sky Origin Stage cultivators!

Even Ye Nantian, the war god of Kingdom of Chen, spoke highly of them. "They can kill three thousands gods. They have no opponents in the world! What a shame that such an outstanding team is under the control of a monster. They followed the wrong side. Pearls are thrown to pigs!"

In fact, they never had been over a thousand men since the team was built!

However, even though they only had such a number, they scared the other kingdoms like hell!

Ye Nantian heaved a sigh because... if such a wonderful team was in the charge of the famous generals, they must be invincible. However, Ji Mengzhan led it, who was even worse than a beast. The team could only work for the king of Kingdom of Tianyu. That was such a waste.

However, on the other side, it had to be admitted that under evil

Ji Mengzhan's lead, this team was even much more terrifying to the world!

This team had no principles!

They had no bottom lines!

They would do anything to finish their jobs. As long as they could complete their missions, they were allowed to do anything!

They used any methods or schemes to reach their goal!

That was exactly Ji Mengzhan's Tianyu God Slayer Team!

...

The five men were getting over to Ye Xiao fiercely. Ye Xiao knew what they wanted.

They wanted to test on his real power.

Apparently, Ji Mengzhan didn't think that these five could actually take him down. He just wanted to know how strong Feng Zhiling was. If they could make him consume some strength, that would be great!

Ye Xiao had a plan. He casually walked into the circle. In fact, he

remembered every enemy's location. The five men were getting over. The fight was yet to start, but Ye Xiao was scared!

He wasn't scared because of the five men. He was scared because of the arrangement of their forces and the cooperation of them all!

The three men who were staying furthest on the mountain must be the three leaders. They set up a defense line in case Ye Xiao escaped. The others were all trying to stand in a point to prevent him from getting away.

Ji Mengzhan had just waved his hand. None of their Sky Origin Stage cultivators moved. It was all Earth Origin Stage cultivators who did the work!

It meant they were already working so well with Ji Mengzhan's order. It was unbelievable!

He didn't even need to tell them his instructions, and they all knew it!

Facing such a bunch of men, who were working unbelievably well together, everyone would be scared!

Such a team was like an army. They were unstoppable. However, that was not enough to deal with Ye Xiao.

Ye Xiao was shocked by how they worked together, but he wasn't shocked by their strength!

His eyes blinked and he shook his arms. He didn't dodge when the men attempted to strike at him. He actually rushed directly on them

He jumped and flew up like a flying arrow.

The five men realized Ye Xiao was trying to fight back, so they made even fiercer attacks. From four directions, they swayed five swords to stab Ye Xiao.

The sword lights flashed and became a net in the air.

It was narrow meshed!

Dozens of their men kept staring at them, who were about crash in the air.

[Under such attacks, he actually dares to rush forward directly. Does he want to make a tough crash?]

It was never a wise plan to make it a fight of attrition when one was outnumbered. In the battle, there was no time for him to rest. If he couldn't rest and be set in a negative position, he would be defeated. Even though he was fighting against people who were weaker, he should try to avoid reckless moves. Every factor would lead to his failure!

Under everyone's watch, Ye Xiao suddenly turned aside in the air.

He had been rushing forward at the beginning, but then then he suddenly rushed sideways, causing him to have less room to breath.

In other words, it became much less impossible to not hit him!

Nobody knew what was going on. They only understood when he had flown through the net!

He just got through it, unharmed!

When he totally got through it, the sword light net was still there in the same shape. That was unbelievable.

The crowd were full of superior cultivators. They all knew why he could do it. The truth had made their pupils shrink. [This Feng Monarch is actually a master level cultivator!]

[If he didn't know the flaw of the attack, he would never be able to get through that net!]

He had gone through the danger like walking over a flat field.

Such excellent judgement, such brave acts!

It also meant another thing. He was going to kill someone!

"Get away!"

Ji Mengzhan shouted to warn the five men.

It was too late.

Ye Xiao coldly smiled. Blue lights like ice beads flew out as he passed the five men. At this moment, when he was at the closest point, his two hands moved and rushed out fast like lightning.

The three men that were closest to him got hit and, in an instant, their throats were cut and blood sprayed out.

His feet rushed out when he nearly passed by.

- Puff! -

- Puff! -

Both of his tiptoes hit on the other two men's chests like hammers with five thousand kilograms weight!

When the two of them passed by Ye Xiao, blood gushed out of their mouths. There were also pieces of their inner organs in the blood!

Ye Xiao's feet stamps directly shattered their inner organs. They couldn't survive!

It was only one move!

One strike, five men killed!

Ye Xiao acted so casually, yet five Earth Origin Stage cultivators died at the same time!

A clean act.

Ye Xiao got back to the floor lightly like a cotton, soundlessly.

There was no blood on his body.

He was still clean and clear.

In front of him, it sounded: - Puff puff puff puff puff... -

Five figures fell on the floor heavily like five gunny sack. They rolled when they touched the floor, and then there was no living sound anymore.

Only a pool of blood spreading on the floor under their dead bodies was left. It flowed like red rivers, gathering and spreading...

...

Chapter 407: Level One of Sky Origin Stage?

Ji Mengzhan looked at the dead bodies of his men and shook his head, yet he was still expressionless on the face.

Two old men beside him looked to each other and nodded. They spoke in a deep voice, "One strike gets five. Level 1 of Sky Origin Stage!"

Ji Mengzhan frowned and narrowed his eyes.

"Confirmed!"

The two old men nodded to confirm at the same time.

Ji Mengzhan felt relieved. The two old men were maesters he paid a lot to recruit. They were both at level 8 of Sky Origin Stage with sharp eyes, and they were good at estimating enemies' strength. They both confirmed that Feng Zhiling was at level 1 of Sky Origin Stage, then Feng Zhiling must be!

Ye Xiao stood in the encirclement. He looked at ease. Deep in his heart, the flame of fighting had rushed up high reaching the sky already!

There was also intent of killing in it!

And there was also a bit of surprise.

When he killed those men, it all went well like he had planned. That was true.

However, he had a feeling of smoothness like water running along the river!

He had never felt it before!

What gave him this feeling?

Heaven Destined Tea!

Ye Xiao thought of it at once.

He had thought that the tea wouldn't bring him any benefit, but only to find that it helped him quite a great deal!

It was just a short feeling. Ye Xiao estimated it, and he reckoned his sensitivity and flexibility must be improved a hundred percent!

It was improved so much without being noticed at all.

He felt happy about it, but he also felt angry. He had drunk so much of that tea, yet the egg swallowed most of it. If it left him more, maybe he could be improved a great deal. [Bastard, it ate all the meat in the soup and only left me some water. Annoying!]

Of course, he knew that if the egg left him more of those colorful spiritual qi, he would have exploded and died. However, he still felt annoyed, because he could only get a tiny portion of such a great benefit!

Thinking about that, he wanted to have a good fight so much. He wanted to have a fight like he had in his previous life.

"Feng Monarch actually has such a capability. How admiring." Ji Mengzhan lit up his narrow eyes, shining with cold lights in it. He said something sounded like a compliment but also like sarcasm. And then he said, "However, you are no more than level 1 of Sky Origin Stage. You are bound to die here today in this place!"

[Level 1 of Sky Origin Stage?]

Ye Xiao was stunned by the opponent's estimation. He then understood. It reminded him how he liked to hide his real strength in appearance. Native cultivators in the Land of Han-Yang would never be able to see his real strength level as he was using some special way to hide it. Only those who were one stage higher than him could tell.

However, he was already level 3 of Sky Origin Stage, so close to level 4. In this world, there was no one who could be one stage higher than him.

Master Bai, Wan of Clouds, Bing Xinyue, and Ye Nantian were all from other worlds. They were naturally different.

None of the native cultivators in the Land of Han-Yang could see through him. They could just estimate him by watching the appearance of his moves.

They thought Ye Xiao was at level 1 of Sky Origin Stage. Ye Xiao felt hilarious.

"You sacrificed five men to just check my strength?" Ye Xiao sneered at him. "Ji Mengzhan, you are a vigorous man."

Ji Mengzhan's face turned dark. He shouted, "Wu Fei!"

A long and narrow figure rushed out off the crowd. He stood there with his arms crossed on his chest. He stared at Ye Xiao with cold eyes and disdainfulness on his face. Apparently, he didn't think highly of this man whom he thought was only level 1 of Sky Origin Stage.

"Kill him!"

Ji Mengzhan waved his hand and blandly spoke, "Do it quick. Cut the head. We are going home! No need to get Wan Zhenghao. We get the bigger one and leave the smaller one to others. It is always a bad idea to be selfish on such a thing."

The man was named Wu Fei. He nodded silently and took out his long blade on his waist.

It was a narrow and straight shaped weird blade. It could be a sword, however, it only had blade on one side, so it was just a blade.

They were all expressionless as they watched the fight.

Wu Fei was already at the top of level 2 of Sky Origin Stage. It should be a piece of cake for him to kill a man of level 1 of Sky Origin Stage!

It should be an easy job.

Some of the men in black who were level 2 of Sky Origin Stage too were expressionless. In their eyes, there were depression. [Why didn't Commander name me? Wu Fei, the bastard, got a bargain now.] For them, whoever cut off Feng Zhiling's head would surely get more rewards. That was something inessential.

Wu Fei took the blade and then jumped up. While he was in the air, the blade had made so many lights like a lotus facing down. It all struck down to Ye Xiao!

He was prompt and he didn't do anything useless.

He made a strike, and it was a strike to kill!

Ye Xiao coldly smiled. "Another one seeking for death!"

Since the enemy didn't talk, he wouldn't talk much either. He made a round and then started spinning like a dragon on the floor. He was rising up fast and spinning!

It was the blade lotus from Wu Fei!

He didn't get away but rushed right onto it!

Ji Mengzhan half closed his eyes as he peacefully looked at them.

If he could get something done with a level 1 cultivator, he wouldn't bother to send a level 2 cultivator!

He wouldn't even consider it!

[Superior cultivators should have their own dignity and tolerance.

What I want is victory and to save time and effort at the same time.

As a level 2 cultivator can take him down, if I send a master level cultivator, isn't it a waste of resources?]

In fact, he had made an exception today though. Wu Fei was a top level 2 cultivator of Sky Origin Stage.

"This Pendulous Lotus is Wu Fei's stunt. He used it right when the fight began. It is breaking a butterfly on the wheel! Wu Fei seems look down upon Feng Zhiling, but he is actually quite careful about this."

Behind Ji Mengzhan, the two old men were calmly making comments. They were predicting the result of the fight.

"That is right. Pendulous Lotus is a good move. When he jumps to the air and faces down, even a level 3 Sky Origin Stage enemy couldn't get away down there. If he tries to fight back on it, he may make it worse. It is indeed breaking a butterfly on the wheel to use this move against Feng Monarch." The other old man was smiling.

...

Chapter 408: Level Two of Sky Origin Stage?

The two old men saw this Feng Monarch from Ling-Bao Hall rushing up to his enemy. It seemed they could see that he would fell back to the floor with wounds all over his body, and his head would become six billion money, piling up like a mountain!

"Hmm. We forgot to tell our man not to destroy Feng Zhiling's face. We need to prove his identity. Well, I guess he must have known such an important thing. Surely..." Ji Mengzhan showed a cold and vicious smile and said.

However, he hadn't finished his talk when he was stopped.

The next moment, his eyeballs seemed to pop out from his narrow eyes.

Under their watch, Feng Monarch suddenly speeded up when he rushed out half way to Wu Fei!

- Shoot! - He became a black whirlwind!

Wu Fei, who was stepping in the air, was rushing down on him directly!

A giant blade lotus bloomed thoroughly! The petals were shining vicious glow. When the petals closed up, it killed!

At this moment, the lotus petals were starting to close up.

There was sound of the blade swaying. The entire space became like hell of blades.

At this moment, a blue light shined. Feng Monarch became a black whirlwind. He was like a dark lightning rushing right towards the center of the lotus!

- Shoot! -

He got through it!

At this moment, he was moving extremely fast. When he rushed into the lotus, there was still a shadow of him outside, disappearing slowly.

In the center of the lotus, it was the lotus pistil. It was the most powerful and lethal part of it.

However, it wasn't in its fiercest moment yet. The petals were not yet closed, and the pistil wasn't formed yet!

That was why it was the weakest point of it at the moment!

- Click! -

A sound of breaking came out. Everyone was staring it. They saw Feng Monarch get through the lotus, ignoring all the blades around him. He reached his hands to both sides like lightning. One handheld Wu Fei's neck, while the other held the back side of his head.

And then he twisted it in clockwise direction.

Wu Fei's neck was twisted three rounds!

It immediately became like fried dough twist!

What made Ji Mengzhan angry the most was that... when Feng Monarch was holding Wu Fei's head, he didn't look at Wu Fei. Instead, he turned over, looking down at Ji Mengzhan. He showed him a smile of sneer and viciousness!

He didn't even look at Wu Fei when he broke his neck!

The enemy fell down. The blade lights defused because the power was gone. Ye Xiao didn't look at it. He just kicked the blade. Wu Fei's narrow blade was kicked and flew out like a shooting star shooting to Ji Mengzhan's chest like a line of lightning!

At the moment, he pushed with his right hand and Wu Fei's body flew out in the distance.

Wu Fei's face was still showing cruelty and coldness, like he was still in charge of everything!

Even when he was dead, he still thought that he could kill Feng Zhiling!

However, he didn't know even after he died that it was Feng Zhiling who should be confident!

- Dang! -

The old man behind Ji Mengzhan drew out his sword and hit on the blade that was shooting towards them.

It made a clear sound. The blade was broken into two parts flying out stabbing into the mountain. Half of them had gotten into the rock.

The rest parts were like a snake, dangling there making sounds!

- Puff! - Wu Fei's body hit the floor. His leg moved a little and then he just lied there silently.

He was dead.

He was lying on his stomach, but his face was facing up because of his twisted neck.

His face was still full of confidence!

Such a scene made everybody turn silent.

Everyone was looking at the dead body. Wu Fei died in a strange way. They then looked to Feng Zhiling.

The sneer on their faces were gone. They became cautious and solemn.

The guy who was confirmed to be only level 1 of Sky Origin Stage actually killed a level 2 cultivator of Sky Origin Stage!

He killed him when the latter one was making his stunt!

They all felt confused like they were short in brain volumes.

[What the hell is that?]

[How did he do it?]

It was easy to understand that a man could make an instant kill when he found the flaw of his enemy's attack, however, a level 1 cultivator did it on a level 2 cultivator. [Does he even have the capability to break the defense qi of the other who was at higher level?]

[That is impossible. Isn't it?]

It might be possible if the man had some special weapon. However, they all had seen it. Feng Zhiling did it with nothing in his hands. That was the truth!

Ji Mengzhan was furious. "Is this level 1 of Sky Origin Stage to you?"

The two old men were embarrassed. They coughed and one of them said, "Well, we made a mistake. He hadn't use his full power. He should be level 2! There is no doubt..."

"Besides, this man, Feng Zhiling must knows Wu Fei quite well. He made his strike when Wu Fei was just about to let go of his most powerful attack. That is why he could do it. It is impossible for him to find out Wu Fei's flaw just when they met for the first time. That was unnatural!" The other one added.

Until Ye Xiao killed Wu Fei, nobody knew that the most powerful point of Wu Fei's strike was the deadly flaw of it!

Not only these men, even Wu Fei himself didn't know it before...

Ji Mengzhan wanted to curse so much!

[Level 2? Hadn't use his full power? No doubt?

Why don't you say it earlier?

You said he was level 1, so I sent Wu Fei. Now I lost a Sky Origin Stage cultivator!

He is dead now, and you told me you made a mistake...

Isn't it too late...]

The two old men behind him were thinking, [If you give an order for everyone to strike together, no matter how strong Feng Zhiling is, he would have been taken down by now.]

[It is you who want to strike with such a stupid attitude...

It is the enemy kingdom's place. You have to show your commanding capability. That is totally useless.

What means not to waste?

No matter what it means, it only matters when you defeat your enemy.]

...

Chapter 409: Bound to Win?

They murmured in their minds. In fact, they forgot something. The suggestion not to waste the manpower were proposed by all the cultivators beyond level 7 of Sky Origin Stage.

The reason was simple. It was all about face. 'How can we, cultivators beyond level 7 of Sky Origin Stage just rush forward and fight like some bandits?'

Under their depression, Ji Mengzhan had to accept the suggestion...

...

Ji Mengzhan took a deep breath out. He looked at Ye Xiao with his narrow eyes and coldly said, "Feng Monarch has been hiding so deep. What a beautiful play to show enemies your weak point! Bravo! I have to admire you. However, you are doomed to die here today. Why struggle..."

Ye Xiao took a white napkin out from his clothes. He wiped his hands and then casually threw it aside. He acted like the neck of Wu Fei had stained his clean hands.

After that, he raised his head under the angry eyes of those men. He looked at Ji Mengzhan and blandly said, "I don't really care about the result. I am always a man with impulsions... When somebody wants to kill me, I will want to hit him back badly... It is my shortage though. I always make it too heavy and always get

people killed. I will be careful though."

Those guys nearly spat out blood when they heard him.

[The bastard is being so pretentious, master level pretentious!]

[So to win the fight is his shortage now. He makes it too heavy and always get people killed. Careful my ass you prick!]

Ji Mengzhan turned over coldly and asked the old men in a low voice, "Are you sure he is level 2?"

The two old men stared at Ye Xiao and observed him carefully. After a while, they both nodded. One of them said, "Absolutely! No more than in the middle of level 2! He must have been planning to kill Wu Fei in advance. He attacked when Wu Fei was about to let go of his lotus on purpose... I guess Kingdom of Chen has been studying about us for a long long time."

Ji Mengzhan felt worried when he heard it.

And then he tried to calm down. [I will leave as soon as this guy dies. Even if Kingdom of Chen has prepared for this for a long time, they can do nothing. What can they do about me though?]

He humphed and shouted, "Qin Wu!"

On the safe side, he sent a level 4 of Sky Origin Stage cultivator

this time!

Qin Wu was at the top of level 4.

"If you can't kill Feng Monarch, Qin Wu, you better buy a tofu and kill yourself with it," Ji Mengzhan blandly spoke.

"Don't worry, Commander. If I cannot take him down, I won't feel merited to still live in the world. I will just buy a piece of tofu and hit myself to death with it." Qin Wu was huge. He looked like a small mountain, moving slowly.

While he smiled, his face turned horrible.

It was unimaginable how such a big guy could say such facetious words!

As the third attack was about to come, Ye Xiao stood there quietly with his hands down. He looked so casual. He was not even cautious.

He was speechless facing over a hundred men there though.

He just couldn't understand it!

[What is wrong with this Ji Mengzhan? Does he think he has too many men? One by one, he sends them to die?

The men he has sent are subpar in capability, strength, mind status and all!

It is said that the people in God Slayer Team all have steady and calm minds. I don't see any in them. That stupid Wu Fei acted like he was surely going to defeat me. He made his most powerful strike when he just got over. I don't care how powerful that lotus strike is, but it showed an obvious flaw. Wasn't it asking for death himself?

I don't see any good points in this legendary team. What I can see is only the blind confidence in them!

You have so many people to use. Why can't you just come over together?

Isn't it much easier to take me?!

Well, it will be easier for me to escape though...

I don't want to kill too many people really!

Do you want me to wipe you up here?

Am I that thirsty for blood to you though?

So incomprehensible.]

Ji Mengzhan solemnly looked at Qin Wu walking forward and asked in a low voice, "It should be okay to let Qin Wu do the job, shouldn't it?"

The old man behind him solemnly spoke, "Qin Wu will win. They have too big difference in cultivation level. However, Qin Wu might not be so suppressing during the fight though."

He sighed. "This Feng Monarch, when he fought the five guys, he won by only one strike. He then took Wu Fei down with one strike too. Even though he must have studied Wu Fei and prepared for a long time, he must have a truly high knowledge about martial arts... As long as Qin Wu stays calm and cautious, he can win the fight."

He spoke loudly to make sure Qin Wu heard him.

It was a warning.

He was telling Qin Wu not to be reckless and to fight with cautiousness.

He was giving Qin Wu an advice of fighting strategy!

Qin Wu kept moving ahead with his huge body. He didn't stop.

He slowly walked with a steady mind. The suppression he made caused everyone to feel suppressed at the same time.

"Qin Wu has fully prepared to attack. He doesn't really make any strikes, but it makes no difference. He had begun the fight. Since he made the first step out, the fight was started. Feng Monarch is still standing right there like a fool. He doesn't attack nor try to stop Qin Wu's preparation. I guess I was wrong about his knowledge about martial art. He may be well acquainted about Wu Fei, that is why he could kill him by one strike. This time, he will definitely die in Qin Wu's hands," one of the old man rubbed his long beard while talking with a smile.

"That is wrong. Qin Wu has made six steps now. When he walks out the ninth step, his vigor will rise to the top. At that time, even a level 5 cultivator can only try to get away from his attacks." The other old man smiled. "This Feng Monarch, who hasn't noticed the truth about Qin Wu's steps, is bound to fail!"

At this moment, the middle-aged man who had been silently standing aside suddenly laughed.

...

Chapter 410: One Strike Again!

Ji Mengzhan looked to where the voice came, and he became respectful all of a sudden. He said, "What is your thought, Brother Zhao?"

The man he called Brother Zhao was wearing black with average height. He was slim, and had a cold face and thick eyebrows. He stayed alone, seemed unfit to others.

It seemed he was always solitary even when he was among ten thousand men.

His eyes were like dead water. He was full of boredom and desolation.

He heard Ji Mengzhan, and he didn't even try to cover the sneer in his heart. He said, "That is well analyzed. Well done."

The man with long beard was annoyed. He blandly spoke, "Brother Zhao, you think I wrong? I wonder what your good view can bring us!"

Brother Zhao indifferently looked at him. His eyes didn't seem to have focal point, like he was looking at nothing. He completely ignored the man and blandly said, "Qin Wu will die for sure! Within no more than one strike!"

Ji Mengzhan asked him more, but he stopped talking. He

wouldn't tell them more about it.

Ji Mengzhan hesitated. Brother Zhao was no ordinary figure. He was a powerful one in the Land of Han-Yang. [He has made a completely different comment. I don't think there is no reason for that.

But, Qin Wu is at the top of level 4 of Sky Origin Stage. Will he be defeated by one strike?! What does he mean 'no more than one strike'?]

While he was thinking, Qin Wu had made his ninth step.

As the old man said, his vigor rose up to top when he finished the steps.

"Feng Zhiling, give me your head!"

Qin Wu shouted and struck out.

Sword lights wildly flashed and burst with blue glows. Within the distance of ten meters, the place was all in blue lights.

Endless sword lights shined and gathered into a long running river, rushing towards Ye Xiao.

"Blade of Sky Origin! Blue Sky Around!" A man among the crowd exclaimed

"It seems Qin Wu wants to end this fight with one strike!"

"That is right. To perform the Blue Sky Around attack, a man in level 4 of Sky Origin Stage has to make full effort. He has to be merged with his mind and his sword to make a blade vortex. Qin Wu's strike is apparently the merge of his mind and sword. He is striking with his full heart. He has operated the superpower of this strike. Even me would have to retreat if he fights against me with that. I would have to step back thirty meters to get away from that and then figure out a way to fight back!"

It was a level 6 cultivator of Sky Origin Stage speaking.

When he looked at Qin Wu's moves, there was praise in his eyes. He was giving a high comment.

[Perfect!

Just perfect!

For a level 4 cultivator, to perfectly strike out this Blue Sky Around, only one of ten thousand can do it!

Qin Wu is making it a perfect strike. He has merged his vigor and spiritual qi in a complete level.

It works so well with his huge strong body.

It is a perfect move!

It will crash everything!

It will crash everyone who is in lower level than him, even the same level with him. If he does it to someone in a little higher level, it will still be an invincible strike!]

When people were praising, Ye Xiao moved again!

Inside the enormous blue sword lights, Ye Xiao flew up with no signs.

He flew in the air and then rushed into the area that was covered by the sword lights!

The lights exploded into millions of cold light spots!

The entire space was filled with the light spots. It was densely packed and shooting around!

This space became full of danger. It was full of horror!

Ye Xiao was still casually staying among these lights.

He didn't move very fast, but he actually dodged all those sword

lights!

Inside such dense lights, even an ant would be chopped into pieces. However, he could actually move casually inside it!

He didn't get hurt at all.

Ji Mengzhan's face changed.

"Retreat! Quick!" He shouted.

And then he shouted, "Go support him! Save him back!"

He finally realized something wrong!

[Monarch Feng is acting so casually. Apparently he is extremely confident. Under such world-covering dense attacks, he can still walk so casually inside it. He must have absolute confidence to break the move. It is never going to get him hurt!

In the other side, once he strikes, Qin Wu will die!]

"Too late!" Beside Ji Mengzhan, that slim Brother Zhao blandly spoke, "He gave Qin Wu the time to walk nine steps and wait till Qin Wu to burst his Blue Sky Around move. He is just trying to create this scene we are watching now. Would he give you the chance to call your man back? Qin Wu is dead!"

When Brother Zhao spoke of ‘create this scene’, Feng Monarch finally made his attack!

Suddenly, golden glow shined up to the sky.

- Clang! - Something hit the sword, making the sound of metals cracking.

When Brother Zhao spoke of ‘Qin Wu is dead’, Ye Xiao’s right hand had heavily hit Qin Wu’s throat like lightning!

- Crack! -

Qin Wu’s eyeballs popped out. Everybody saw Qin Wu’s neck collapsed after being hit. And then it became swollen, but in a different shape. The parts of his body under his neck all became the color of blood, swollen.

[Qin Wu was finished!]

They all had the same thought. What happened showed that the bones in Qin Wu’s neck were all smashed into pieces! Even the veins were all cut. The broken bone pieces were all gathered together, blocking the way connecting his head and his body.

The blood in his body couldn’t rush up, but it was running wildly because Qin Wu was fighting. It kept running up to the head, causing it to swell with all the blood in it!

The golden glow shone again. They finally saw it clearly. The left hand of Feng Monarch didn't hold any weapons. It was his hand shining in golden glow. His hand became like a gold hand. Qin Wu's sword had already been snatch and held in Feng Zhiling's hand now.

He kicked Qin Wu's dying body and made it spin. And then he swayed the sword and chopped down. A head flew up to the sky. The body without a head span for a while and then its neck was pointing at Ji Mengzhan like it had been planned to be so.

...

Chapter 411: Let Me Try

The next moment, a dozens of meters stream of blood jetted out from the neck, right on Ji Mengzhan's face!

Ji Mengzhan's face turned pale, but he had a quick reaction. He jumped up high, and the blood only reached below his body. It didn't touch him but only made a blood path on the floor.

The body without a head fell to the floor and shook the ground.

People's hearts were shocked at the same time.

It became silent!

One strike again.

One strike again!

It was not really one strike at all. He just snatched the weapon and grabbed his neck at the same time. It was barely one strike really!

It was exactly like that Brother Zhao predicted!

Qin Wu, who was level 4 of Sky Origin Stage, rushed out fiercely. From the moment he made his attack after the nine steps, to the moment he died in misery, it had been just a few seconds!

Feng Zhiling even planned the way he died and the direction his body would face. The blood jet was the proof of all this!

That was Qin Wu's blood of life!

In other words, the way the body span and stopped there facing that direction was all planned! It would definitely go that way!

[Feng Zhiling could make such a plan in such a drastic fight. He even calculated the details of it. His wisdom of fights is truly horrible, terrifying, world shocking, and unbelievable!]

They all thought of something at the same time. When Feng Monarch's hand turned into golden hand, it directly hit the blade of the sword!

To dodge aside wouldn't show his true strength, but that hit was a vivid proof to his true power!

It was this hit that made Qin Wu, a level 4 cultivator of Sky Origin Stage stopped his rushing body. He was stopped while he was rushing fiercely!

After that, it was the moment when Feng Monarch reached his right hand casually and killed him within seconds...

He did it without stop. It was so smooth like water running in the

river!

That meant the hit on the blade didn't effect Feng Zhiling at all. Instead it was the key to his victory!

Ji Mengzhan's face finally became extremely vicious. He turned around staring at the two old men. His face was dark. He gritted with his teeth, saying, "Is this level 2 of Sky Origin Stage you were so sure about?!"

The old men blushed and didn't know what to answer.

Before this, they had never made wrong judgement about enemies' capabilities. Sometimes they might not be so accurate, but never had been wrong like this before. It was completely wrong!

The truth showed that they were ridiculously wrong!

[But... This Feng Zhiling is obviously in lower level than us. How come I cannot see him through?]

[Even if one of us will make a wrong judgement, it is nearly impossible that we both make a wrong judgement!]

After a while, the old man who named Chao said, "I am old and I must be flurry in eyes. Feng Zhiling... Maybe he is... Level 5 of Sky Origin Stage. Well, maybe higher... I cannot be sure..."

Ji Mengzhan shouted furiously, "Do you mean I need to send more men to die before you can make a positive judgement? Maybe I should send more men to attempt until Feng Zhiling is dead? Is it so? Is it what you suggest? To make attempts?"

The two old men opened the mouth but ended up with no words to say.

[You are the commander... You make the choice, you make the call, you are in charge. Now our men died, you pushed the responsibility to us... You treat us like your punching bags...

When we made perfect judgments in the past, how come you never say anything?!

Darned!]

"Feng Monarch may not be in a high level, but he has various methods during the fight. He has astonishing sharp eyes. He can always see a perfect way to deal with the situation. Moreover, he has never shown his true strength all along. I haven't seen his weapons yet... If you send more men to get him, you are sending them to die."

Brother Zhao looked at Ye Xiao with cautious eyes. He blandly spoke, "Why don't you let me try it."

Ji Mengzhan felt happy. He said, "Brother Zhao has wise

opinions! Please, Brother Zhao."

Brother Zhao blandly nodded. He looked tired as usual and walked out slowly to Ye Xiao.

He just moved and his slim body showed an aura of solitariness.

He was wearing a black robe, which was flying in the air because of the wind. He was like a ghost dangling in the world, walking step by step, bringing endless sorrow and pain to the world.

Ye Xiao frowned.

He had been noticing this man since he was surrounded.

No matter how strong the team led by Ji Mengzhan was, it was limited. Ye Xiao didn't really think highly of it. He couldn't defeat them all at a time, but he was quite sure he could get away alive.

Ji Mengzhan, the two level 8 old men, or the three superior cultivators who were guarding the area could not threaten Ye Xiao that much!

That was why he didn't panic at all. He acted casually, because he really was casual.

[If I want to go, even men in level 9 of Sky Origin Stage couldn't stop me!]

However, only this man in black clothes made him feel weird and worried.

He had been silent all the time since they arrived.

However, when he looked at Ye Xiao, Ye Xiao felt like being watched by a poisonous and vicious snake.

He felt chilled.

It was an instinct for great danger!

If there was anyone in this God Slayer Team who could threaten Ye Xiao's life, this man must be the first!

When this man walked out, the aura of solitariness made Ye Xiao felt it more clearly.

Moreover, he looked peaceful. The boredom on his face and his indifference all made Ye Xiao feel real strange.

It felt like that man had nothing to love in the world...

He was preparing to embrace death at any second.

Other than that, on his body, there was a mass of extreme cold qi

flowing around.

...

Chapter 412: Killer King

Such qi was cold enough, but it was not an aura of killing. It was difficult to describe it. It just made people feel uncomfortable.

Ye Xiao felt that he should know this guy. He had never truly seen this guy, but somebody must have mentioned him to Ye Xiao earlier!

He just couldn't remember it.

Brother Zhao casually walked three steps forward. He stood at about fifteen meters distance to Ye Xiao. He finally raised his tired eyes. He stared at Ye Xiao inanimately. He tiredly said, "Feng Monarch, sorry. I am going to make my strike now."

Ye Xiao blandly said, "Well if you are no sorry, will you not attack?"

Brother Zhao was surprised. He looked at Ye Xiao again. The solitary in his eyes was more obvious. His qi was rising up, denser and denser.

Apparently, it was more than enough for him to say those words already. Even though Ye Xiao had said something that surprised him, he didn't want to speak no more. He wanted to though, but he just moved.

At this moment, Ye Xiao was enlightened. He murmured, "I see.

That is a face of no desire for life on you... No desire for life? You are Zhao Pingtian?"

That man in black, Brother Zhao, was indifferent. He coldly answered, "A name is just a mark. A living man has a name. A dead one has none. All dead men have one common name, corpse."

Ye Xiao said, "Oh? Hmm. Well said. Reasonable."

Brother Zhao coldly continued, "Life and death, there is a boundary between them. Transmigration makes countless people repeat life and death. No matter who you are, you can never escape. It is extremely difficult to become a capable man after a long life of training. However, to die is the fastest and simplest."

"As the sword light flashes, head down, all done."

Brother Zhao sounded so indifferent. However, even he himself thought it strange. [How come I would speak a lot today?]

[It feels like... like somebody is urging me to say more words in front of this man. Such a strange feeling. Uncomfortable...]

After that, he kept his mouth shut. He suddenly locked on Feng Zhiling. He was about to attack.

Ye Xiao laughed and said, "That is some great talk. Smart and reasonable. However, such a philosophical theory comes from the mouth of the No. 3 assassin in the world. That truly shocked me. A

well-known killer king actually has such a deep understanding about life and death."

Nothing to live for, No. 3 in the world; a killing king with one sword to take the world!

Ye Xiao finally knew who he was.

He was known as the No. 3 assassin in the Land of Han-Yang, the killer king, Zhao Pingtian!

He was as famous as Ning Biluo, a superior assassin.

The reason why he was No. 3 was not that he did worse in his job. In fact, Ning Biluo and Boundless Saint all had failed in some missions. Zhao Pingtian was a man who spared no life. He hadn't fail even once. He was always low-profile, and he didn't really care about the ranking, so just a small group of people knew about him!

When people were making the ranking list of assassins, there were people proposing that he should be the No. 1. However, Boundless Saint didn't buy it. He once had a fight against Zhao Pingtian. They were almost even in strength. In fact, he was a little big stronger than Zhao Pingtian. Besides, as people knew, he appeared to be much better in records than Zhao Pingtian. He surely wouldn't agree to be lower than Zhao Pingtian in the ranking list. Zhao Pingtian didn't really care about it though. He wouldn't mind at all.

Zhao Pingtian was No. 3 at last.

Although he was No. 3, the title, 'killer king', nobody dared to take it from him. Even Boundless Saint wouldn't dare to do it.

Zhao Pingtian's world shocking cultivation capability was surely not a trivial matter!

Boundless Saint surely believed that he was stronger than Zhao Pingtian. Maybe he could kill Zhao Pingtian if he did all that he could. However, he might also lose a lot for it. He would absolutely lose a part of his cultivation capability. Even if he won, the Boundless Lake would fall. Besides, it was just fighting for a title to mess with Zhao Pingtian. He would get nothing else in return. That was why he would never do such silly business.

As for Ning Biluo, he was king of assassins already. He wouldn't mind the killer king title. Besides, he had a lot to worry about. He truly didn't have the time to care much about it!

Ye Xiao had heard about him before. Several days earlier when he was talking about the top figures in the assassination field with Ning Biluo and Liu Changjun, Zhao Pingtian was the first name they brought up. That was why Ye Xiao was most impressed. As he saw the face with no desire to live on his opponent's face, he suddenly realized who he truly was.

Because he knew who he was, he felt a bit worried, with cold sweat in his hands.

Such a top ranking assassin, who could've wiped out the entire world, was not even a bit like the others under Ji Mengzhan's lead.

He thought about how horrible Ning Biluo was, and he knew how horrible this Zhao Pingtian, the killer king was.

However, he didn't understand... [Why is this world No. 3 assassin always unhappy, showing a face with no desire to life?]

[The cold qi on him is so weird. It doesn't seem like going out from his body...]

[What is it?]

While Ye Xiao was lost in thoughts, Zhao Pingtian's dry hands had already held on his sword. His eyes became sharp and fierce. The qi of killing spread out, which nearly covered the entire sky.

Apparently. he was about to attack.

Ye Xiao operated his Yin Yang Eyes at once. Yin in the left, Yang in the right; he wanted to see through his enemy.

He didn't dare to act casually facing such powerful enemy.

He was a lot weaker after all.

A tiny mistake could make himself dead!

When he just saw things through his Yin Eye, he was shocked by what he saw.

In the sight of Yin Eye, there was a mass of grey fog floating beside Zhao Pingtian.

It was staying beside him closely.

Ye Xiao looked at the fog and tried to figure out what it was!

[How would such a strange grey fog surround Zhao Pingtian?]

...

Chapter 413: You Have an Assistant!

When Ye Xiao operated his Yin Yang Eyes martial art, his dantian was thrilled. A mass of colorful spiritual qi rushed up and entered his eyes within instant!

The colorful qi was the spiritual qi from the Heavenly Destined Tea!

Within just a moment, Ye Xiao's eyes became extremely clear from being blurred!

He saw... inside the grey fog, a little girl with clear eyes and white teeth. She was watching him and Zhao Pingtian's back with concerns. The girl was hidden inside the strange grey fog. When she looked at Zhao Pingtian, she was so soft and gentle. She was full of love for him.

On her face at the middle of her eyebrows was a mole, which made her look prettier.

Ye Xiao was stunned.

[What the hell is it?]

- Clang! -

Zhao Pingtian's sword left the scabbard. It was flowing in the air

like autumn water. The blade suddenly flashed in cold light while directly pointed at Ye Xiao. Zhao Pingtian tiredly spoke, "Feng Monarch, it is seeking death to be distracted in the battle. Please make your attack. There is always an end to a life. Today, let's see it is your end or mine."

Ye Xiao's eyes kept locking on the grey fog. The girl in the fog seemed extremely nervous. He looked at Zhao Pingtian with concerns. She was helpless and distraught.

Ye Xiao was moved and he blandly said, "Zhao Pingtian, a fight is a fight. Why do you bring an assistant with you?! Isn't it unfair to win the battle? Isn't it staining your title 'killer king'?"

Zhao Pingtian half closed his eyes and blandly said, "I have been solitary all my life. Only my sword accompanies me. I never have an assistant! Feng Monarch, you are humiliating me with what you said."

Ye Xiao sneered and said, "No assistant? What? You think I am blind? The soft, sweet, gentle girl with a red beauty mole on her forehead, what is she then? Isn't she your girl?"

'The soft, sweet, gentle girl with a red beauty mole on her forehead, what is she then? Isn't she your girl?' It was like a thunder striking inside Zhao Pingtian's heart!

Steady and calm like him, even when it thundered in a sunny day, he wouldn't care and he would just play deaf. However, when he heard Ye Xiao's words, he couldn't control himself. He felt

dizzy, thirst, and nervous. He was having a complicated feeling, like he was in a dream!

He became no more bored, cold, solitary and tired of living.

He just stood there, stunned. He stared at Ye Xiao for a long time, and then he suddenly quivered as his sword fell off his hand.

- Clang! -

A weapon meant his life, yet he didn't notice it had fallen off. He just stared at Ye Xiao and spoke with a shaking voice, "What... What did you say?"

In that weird grey fog, the pretty girl suddenly raised her head. She was so surprised that she opened her pretty mouth. She looked at Ye Xiao, unbelieving. [He... He can see me?]

The others were all confused.

[What the hell are they doing there?]

Ji Mengzhang shouted with anger, "Feng Monarch, a fight is a fight. What trick are you playing? Why play mysterious? There is nothing. You think we are all blind? You think you can fool us?"

‘You think we are all blind’. Apparently, he was warning Zhao Pingtian. [We are watching here. There is nothing beside you!

What the hell are you doing? Just get him done already!]

The others all started talking. "Nonsense! We are all watching it clearly. He does not have assistant!"

"Playing tricks, that shameless bastard!"

"What assistant! Bright day, shiny sun, blue sky. What is it you want to speak nonsense?"

"How could we, people in martial world believe such thing?"

"Delaying it! Trying to breath for more seconds! Shameless!"

...

However, no matter how they shouted and urged, Zhao Pingtian acted like he was bewitched. He stared at Ye Xiao, stunned and still.

Apparently, Ye Xiao was ridiculous in others' eyes. What he said was completely nonsense. However, it stirred up great tides in Zhao Pingtian's heart. He was almost broken down now.

At this moment, he was indeed the only person who knew what it meant, 'the soft, sweet, gentle girl with a red beauty mole on her forehead'...

Even if it was a coincidence, normal people would only say a girl with a beauty mole, or with a red mole. Even if he said a girl with a red beauty mole, he wouldn't coincidentally know that she was soft and sweet.

That was her sublimity, not her appearance.

Although Ye Xiao only knew a little about her, that was enough!

"What now? You should just admit you have an assistant with you! Maybe a girl can barely do anything for you, she is still on your side! Do you dare to deny it?" Ye Xiao asked Zhao Pingtian.

"No! I won't deny it! I admit it!" Zhao Pingtian was shaking. "Where is she? What is she now?!"

He sounded in a hurry. In his eyes, there was pain. What he said was like ripping out his chest. He was expressing the feeling deep in his heart.

He even admitted he had a secret assistant to help him. That was surely a ridiculous accusation, but he admitted it. He was afraid Ye Xiao wouldn't tell him where the girl was!

In the grey fog, the girl trembled the moment she saw how Zhao Pingtian acted. Tears dropped down from her cheeks. However, the tears turned into grey mist when they came down from her cheeks. It just became part of the grey fog...

She looked at Zhao Pingtian obsessively. She looked heartbroken on the face. It also could move and shock others.

"Zhao Pingtian!" Ji Mengzhan shouted. He hurriedly spoke, "We people in martial world have killed countless men in our lives. How can you believe such a liar? Go do it now! Finish him! His lie will vanish with his death! Don't listen to him! Don't ruin your reputation!"

"Shut up! You shut the fxck up!" Zhao Pingtian angrily shouted. He quickly turned over and stared at Ji Mengzhan. Muscles on his face were twisting, like he was having a spasm. His eyes were filled with extreme anger. He lowered his voice and spoke, "Ji Mengzhan, you bastard. Say one more word to interrupt, and I will kill you! I will kill you! Vanish my fxcking ass! Get off now!"

A enormous mass of killing qi burst out from him. The threatening talk of him was extremely fierce and terrifying!

...

Chapter 414: Change Sides in a War

Ji Mengzhan was shocked after being surrounded by an immense killing qi. He didn't have time to react before he was covered by the cold qi. He felt like he was trapped in an ice cave as his face turned pale.

He didn't dare to say a word under the suppression of Zhao Pingtian's killing qi.

The aura of killing that the No. 3 assassin showed was definitely more overwhelming than Ning Biluo's!

What made him burst like this anyway?

Rather than that... Who was the girl with a red beauty mole on her forehead?

Ji Mengzhan didn't know what that girl meant to Zhao Pingtian. If the grey fog truly vanished, Zhao Pingtian might have to kill everybody to vent the anger in his chest!

On the other side, Ye Xiao didn't know who that girl was too. However, he knew that she must be very important to Zhao Pingtian. The emotions they showed, and the connections they had to each other showed everything. It was a dangerous moment for Ye Xiao indeed, but he decided to help them communicate with each other!

He did it for the true love in the world.

[I failed once.]

"She is crying at the moment," Ye Xiao calmly spoke, "she is looking at you, crying. She is distressed. Zhao Pingtian, who is she?"

"She's crying? How? Why is she crying? I am fine. I should cry instead..." Zhao Pingtian was upset and he murmured. He looked distressed too. He spoke in a hoarse voice, "Rou-Er! My Rou-Er! You... Don't you cry! Don't cry!"

The girl was shaking in the grey fog. Apparently, she was trying to stop her tears. However, she just couldn't. It came out more and more.

Ye Xiao saw it and didn't know whether he should tell Zhao Pingtian about it or not. If he did, Zhao Pingtian would surely feel more distressed!

Zhao Pingtian rushed over to Ye Xiao and asked in hurry, "Do you really see her? Really?" It was full of forwardness and hope. He was even afraid that Ye Xiao would say no and his dream would vanish again!

Zhao Pingtian was totally lost his calm; he showed weak points everywhere. If Ye Xiao wanted to kill him, it would just be a piece of cake. However, how would Ye Xiao do such a thing?

Ye Xiao nodded peacefully to answer the question.

Zhao Pingtian hurriedly asked, "Can she hear what I said? Can she?"

Ye Xiao looked at the girl who was looking at Zhao Pingtian obsessively in the grey fog and he nodded again. He said, "I don't know why, but she... she does hear you. She can see every move of you, everything about you!"

[She can?!]

Zhao Pingtian's face turned red because he was thrilled by the answer. He staggered and nearly fell on the floor. He kept himself steady as he spoke with empty eyes, "Rou-Er, Rou-Er... You are always here... You have always been with me... Gods do bless me... Hahaha... Hahahaha..."

He was jumping with glee like he was crazy, but tears were coming out from his eyes.

His mind was lost in bewilderment.

Anybody could take his life at the moment, not to mention Ye Xiao.

It wouldn't need the slightest effort to do it!

However, Ye Xiao didn't do it. He looked at him with compassion.

To kill a man with love, Ye Xiao couldn't do it. How could Xiao Monarch do such a thing?!

"Rou-Er... Listen to me... You... I..." Zhao Pingtian murmured. Tears covered his eyes. He was murmuring something and nobody knew what it was.

"Order to you all! All of you, move! Kill Feng Zhiling and save Brother Zhao!" Ji Mengzhan knew something was wrong, so he gave the order.

[If we let it be, I am afraid Zhao Pingtian will turn around and kill me instead.]

Nobody could believe the well-known killer king would believe in ghost? He actually got obsessed by a few words from the enemy...

Ji Mengzhan was upset. He was thinking, [I spent so much money. I didn't hire a fake one, did I?]

He knew he would offend Zhao Pingtian if he gave such an order, but he couldn't think too much about it now. With Zhao Pingtian's weird acts, things would become more and more out of control if he let it be!

About eighty men rushed out at the same time, shouting.

Zhao Pingtian was murmuring and lost in thoughts. It seemed he cared nothing about what was happening around him.

Tears from his eyes showed the greatest affectionaten.

It was like the girl in his dream was sitting with him right now, listening to his words...

Only Ye Xiao knew that the girl in the grey fog was truly listening to him concentratedly... listening to every word he said...

Ye Xiao bitterly smiled.

He never expected that his small move would lead to such a weird scene, however, everything was reasonable at the same time.

He thought maybe it thrilled the guy too much.

Now that many men were rushing over to him, he believed they wouldn't only attack him.

It they had a chance, they would definitely attack Zhao Pingtian too!

There will be no hesitation.

Zhao Pingtian was no more their man now. He was more like a bomb that would explode at any second to them!

It might kill lots of their men!

That was why they wouldn't hesitate!

"Well... They are rushing over!" Ye Xiao spoke fast. It was a dangerous moment. Ye Xiao could barely protect himself, not to mention protecting Zhao Pingtian.

However, Zhao Pingtian didn't do nothing.

"They are coming to take Rou-Er," Ye Xiao said.

It was too dangerous now. Ye Xiao had to make such move. At least he could make Zhao Pingtian ready to fight again!

"Who dares?!" Zhao Pingtian's face became fierce and vicious, no more soft and gentle. He raged up with eyes like lightning. The killing qi from him covered the entire space as he shouted, "Who dares to take my Rou-Er? Who?"

The guys were embarrassed. They all stopped.

They all felt extremely speechless.

[What the hell? What is this?]

If they didn't stop, they would have to get on Zhao Pingtian. A delirious Zhao Pingtian was completely different from a conscious one. The former one was a sheep waiting for the butcher, while the latter one was a killer king!

Zhao Pingtian's cold eyes went around the guys. He suddenly moved his wrist and the sword on the floor got back to his hand.

- Clang! -

...

Chapter 415: Maneuver

As the killer king turned fierce, everybody felt cold all of a sudden.

"Can I see her in person?" Zhao Pingtian turned around looking at Ye Xiao. He asked with a low voice, with eyes full of heat. "I want to see her! I want to see her so much!"

He then looked to the sky murmuring with his heart broken, "I want to see her in person. You liar. You liar... You liar..."

He was calling someone liar, but he looked soft and gentle.

Ye Xiao peacefully spoke, "You want me to do it here? Is it look like a proper place to you?"

Zhao Pingtian was enlightened. He said, "That's true. This is not a good place. Let's find somewhere else."

He then turned around while standing straight up. He swayed the sword in his hand and then there came a sound. - Crack! -

It was like a lightning striking in the sky. There suddenly appeared a long space rift in front of Zhao Pingtian, which was twisted and dark. It lasted for a long while before it vanished.

"Move away!" Zhao Pingtian seemed extremely distant as he

spoke in a unquestionable tone.

"Are you out of your mind! Brother Zhao!" Ji Mengzhan was so angry that his face was twisted. His slim body which looked like a narrow bamboo was shaking because of anger at the moment.

He couldn't even dream about how things would end up this way.

Although he had thought about killing Zhao Pingtian earlier because he was delirious, now he was apparently back to himself. However, he actually chose to stand on Ye Xiao's side. Zhao Pingtian was apparently wrong on this!

"I am not interested in bullsh*tting with you at the moment!" He had somehow composed himself again, so he became like a killer king again. A massive aura of killing qi was gathering up on him. "Move! Unless you want to die!"

He stepped forward with big strides.

His face looked solemn. At this moment, even Ning Biluo wouldn't dare to fight him as he was in such a prime condition.

Boundless Saint would very likely hide away!

Zhao Pingtian looked peaceful and calm, yet he was crazy inside.

A crazy man who had a clear mind and superior capability, he

must be more horrible than death.

All his potentials were activated at this moment.

His power had risen to the prime level!

At this moment, he had no distracting thoughts!

That was the most horrible thing about him!

In his heart, there was only one thought. [Get out of here and find another place!]

That represented Zhao Pingtian's tragedy and hope of his life!

If somebody dared to stop him, he would see him as the biggest enemy in the world!

He would kill every man or even god who dared to stand in his way!

He would kill everything in the way!

Ji Mengzhan made up his mind and loudly shouted, "Go ahead all of you! Kill Feng Zhiling!"

And then he stepped back quickly.

Countless assassins in black rushed over from every direction with cold faces.

Ji Mengzhan chose to take the risk for the six billion after all.

[Even though No. 3 assassin and killer king are both terrifying titles, I have so many men on my side. They are all no ordinary figures. Do you think you can kill them all?]

"You are seeking death!" Zhao Pingtian coldly and fiercely shouted, with eyes filled with killing intent.

At the moment, seven men had rushed over to Zhao Pingtian. They were all in light weights and surrounded with blue glow. They were all Sky Origin Stage cultivators.

They didn't want to do this to Zhao Pingtian. In fact, they were all trying to get pass Zhao Pingtian and get to Feng Zhiling directly.

They were merciless assassins, and they were no fools.

It was seeking death to mess with Zhao Pingtian!

However, Feng Zhiling was near him. They just wanted to kill Feng Zhiling and leave Zhao Pingtian alone!

[Don't you forget that we came all the way together. We have

traveled thousands of miles together. We should have some certain connections, right? Would you really kill us?]

Apparently, they didn't know that Zhao Pingtian was totally crazy now!

To negotiate with a crazy man, that was stupid!

Zhao Pingtian shouted loudly. His voice was hoarse and loud enough to break the sky.

His shout was sounding, yet he had already moved!

While he moved, there was a mass of blue sword lights rising up around his body like tides. It kept rushing forward rapidly. Within just seconds, ten meters around him was all blue light sea!

Among the blue sword lights, seven white glow flashed.

Zhao Pingtian didn't turn around. He just said, "Come with me!"

And then he stepped ahead with big strides.

Wherever the seven streams of white lights passed, blood sprayed like rain. The seven Sky Origin Stage cultivators didn't even have time to scream before their bodies were ripped into pieces. The bodies were like exploding, flying out to different directions!

Zhao Pingtian had rushed away thirty meters.

Around him, there were all broken arms and legs. It was a mess.

Ye Xiao was stunned. He had made a wrong estimation about Zhao Pingtian. He truly deserve his titles.

If he were Zhao Pingtian, he could also take care of the surrounding seven men, but he could never be able to kill them easily.

To kill them like Zhao Pingtian did—to take their lives in a blink while rushing forward—it was absolutely difficult for him to do.

It was difficult, but not impossible, because Ye Xiao had his own special technique. If he attacked with full effort, he could kill a bunch of enemies in area of attacks. However, that would harm himself too. The most important thing was to retreat after all.

One thing that he cared about the most was that Zhao Pingtian didn't seem to want to escape at all. He just kept rushing forward and kill everyone on the path. There were no wounded men after his sword went through!

There were no wounded men because they were all dead!

[Since you don't want to make a way for me, don't bother. I will kill the way out!]

Zhao Pingtian's face was cold and distant. His wrist was moving so fast, and the sword in it was making sounds. - Shoot shoot... - The sword kept flying around.

With Zhao Pingtian making the way, Ye Xiao didn't hesitate. He operated his martial art and kept following Zhao Pingtian closely. He was safe and didn't even have a chance to fight at all.

Zhao Pingtian was like an invincible war god. He fought them all himself. Apparently, he was trying to keep everything that would possibly harm Ye Xiao away.

...

Chapter 416: Awe-inspiring!

For Zhao Pingtian, Ye Xiao was the most important person at the moment. He would rather let himself be harmed but not Ye Xiao!

Ye Xiao had all the information he wanted about her after all!

A cold wind rapidly rushed over. Zhao Pingtian's shoulder was wounded and blood came out. He was injured after all. It was the first time today.

Manpower was sometimes poor. Zhao Pingtian was fighting against many people on his own after all. Besides, he needed to protect Ye Xiao. He couldn't protect both himself and Ye Xiao that well. That was why he finally got injured!

However, it seemed he didn't notice it at all. His sword rapidly moved and the Sky Origin Stage cultivator who hurt him didn't have time to retreat before his body was cut into two pieces. His head flew up to the sky, spinning. When it fell down to the floor, Zhao Pingtian was already sixty meters away!

Zhao Pingtian was like a ghost, a monster at the moment! He was invincible, unstoppable!

Ye Xiao was stunned by what he saw.

[It can't be Zhao Pingtian's real capability. He is the No. 3 assassin in the world, the killer king, but he shouldn't be this

strong, this is crazy!]

[If he is powerful like this, he would have long triumphed over Ning Biluo, not to mention number two, Boundless Saint!]

After being surprised, Ye Xiao was enlightened!

The reason why Zhao Pingtian could be so strong at the moment was that he had entered a selfless status. It made him stay in a supreme condition.

In such status, he was like monster. He had actually put out a surge of energy from his instincts. That was the extreme level of his capability. Even if Ning Biluo was here, he would lose if he fought against Zhao Pingtian now!

This was what Zhao Pingtian was after for his whole life!

If everything went well, this must be the only chance he had to burst into such status.

The only chance, and Ji Mengzhan happened to encounter it...

Was it Ye Xiao's good luck or Ji Mengzhan's misfortune?!

Behind Zhao Pingtian and Ye Xiao, there were bloody heads and broken arms and legs on the floor.

"Since we have worked together for some time, I am giving you the last advice. Get away, or I will kill you all!" Zhao Pingtian's voice sounded. He looked at Ji Mengzhan with a pair of cold eyes!

Ji Mengzhan's face turned pale. He was extremely terrified and angry at the same time. "Zhao Pingtian, you broke your word! You shameless nasty cxnt! Don't forget you have accepted a hundred thousand from me! You broke the ethic as an assassin! You broke the rule of assassination! There will be no place for you in the world of assassination!"

Zhao Pingtian acted like he didn't hear it at all as he kept rushing forward with strides. The long sword was making blue lights round and round. It was swaying in the area like rainstorm. He spoke indifferently, "A hundred thousand? I will return it to you. And I will surely take the responsibility for breaking the rule of assassination. However, I have to do this today."

"Even if the entire world stands in front of me, it is worthless comparing to what I want to do now!"

"If you don't move away, I will kill you!"

Zhao Pingtian shouted and a sword light formed into a long dragon in the air. It was pointing at Ji Mengzhan as he shouted, "Give the order and get off here!"

Within the seconds Zhao Pingtian rushed over, there were lots of broken corpse lying on the floor with blood. At least thirty cultivators died and became part of it. They all died on this blood

lane.

This blood lane was the path to the hell!

Nobody could stop him!

"Retreat!" Ji Mengzhan waved his hand. He was helpless, and he had no other choice. His people felt relieved like he spared their lives, so they hurriedly stepped away. While doing so, they looked at Zhao Pingtian like they were looking at a monster from hell. All of them felt fear.

The two old men who were level 8 of Sky Origin Stage got back to Ji Mengzhan with their hairs in a mess. They breathed heavily, and their faces were pale, looking extremely terrified.

[What the hell is this?]

They couldn't understand it!

When Zhao Pingtian came to them, he showed them his capability. He had fought against the cultivators in the God Slayer Team as practice. That day, the seven leaders fought together but only made it even fighting against Zhao Pingtian!

He had shocked everybody, because he didn't lose the fight against seven level 8 Sky Origin Stage cultivators. They were obviously one of the more powerful forces in the world.

A killer king was indeed marvelously strong.

At that day, they were sure Zhao Pingtian didn't hide his true capability.

If he fought against the seven level 8 Sky Origin Stage cultivator yet still tried to hide his real capability, that would be too horrible!

Even Ning Biluo couldn't do it!

However, now as they saw...

The entire God Slayer Team worked together in this fight, which was a lot stronger than the seven leaders!

It was nearly equal to twenty of those leaders fighting together, but they were beaten up by Zhao Pingtian on his own.

They fought face to face. Zhao Pingtian didn't have any chance to play dirty tricks during the fight!

[What the hell is it?]

[Doesn't it mean that he is three times stronger than he was the first day we met!]

[At least three times!]

"Let's go!" Ji Mengzhan stared at Zhao Pingtian with his twisted face. He was furious and his mouth quivered. "I can assure you. You will regret this! You will!"

Ji Mengzhan felt so uncomfortable about all this depressing thing.

He nearly spat out blood because of it!

It had been a god given opportunity for him to earn a fortune! While things were going quite well—with Feng Monarch in a desperate situation and the six billion money so close to his hand—what happened truly shocked him to hell.

The problem actually came from inside his team!

[Zhao Pingtian must have gone mad. The bloody Feng Zhiling just said something to him, somenonsense, and yet he actually believed him! I can't believe there is actually such a stupid assassin in the world!]

[He believe there is ghost in the world...]

Ji Mengzhan felt like spitting out blood when he thought of it!

[Fxck you...]

[If I know he has such a weak point, I should have made up a few stories to make him loyal to me!]

[Now look at him, I can only see him slaughter my team, and I can do nothing about it!]

...

Chapter 417: Who Did This?

Ji Mengzhan got back on the horse with his men. He was gloomily preparing to leave, then he heard Zhao Pingtian say, "Leave my horse be. And leave another one."

Ji Mengzhan nearly spat out blood.

[Fucking prick! You fucking killed so many men of mine. Now you fucking want our horses for that bloody trick-playing Feng Zhiling! And you said it like we owe it to you... You think you are commanding your men here?

Who do you think you are?]

He was just about to shout and refuse, but a strong aura of killing covered him right away. The death was so close to him again.

That was obvious.

[Leave the horse or leave your life!]

Ji Mengzhan was trembling. He was both embarrassed and angry as he shouted, "... Leave them three horses!"

He had thought a lot within seconds. At the end, he decided not to piss Zhao Pingtian up at this moment, so he gave up. Tolerance made space after all!

After giving the order, he was too ashamed to be here any longer. He kicked the horse and left quickly.

All the other cultivators of God Slayer Team left. Dust flew up in the air, and the horse steps sounded like thunder. They immediately disappeared.

They came in a hurry and left in a hurry. It only took them the time of two pots of tea to boil to come and leave!

They didn't even take care of the dead bodies. They just let them be there. Apparently, they didn't even want to take care of their dead bodies, just let the bodies rot in the wild.

As for the horses...

In fact, they didn't just leave three horses... There were over thirty horses left in that place!

They left in a hurry. Ji Mengzhan shouted, and many of them answered. Each of them had left three horses... Those were horses without owners anyway.

It had nothing to do with the living men anyway.

They just ran for their lives on their horses. Nobody cared how many horses had been left.

Since their commander was running like a rabid now, who cared about the horses?

To get away as soon as they could, that was the most important thing they should do!

There were actually over thirty horses there including those of the dead men!

...

Zhao Pingtian was expressionless looking at those men running. He just stood there like a spear.

He was bleeding, yet he acted like he had no feeling of all those wounds.

"Feng Monarch, now it is our turn." Zhao Pingtian looked anxious. "You are safe now. I guess we can have a good talk now, can't we?"

Ye Xiao said, "I am safe now here. However, we shouldn't stay here for long. Let's find somewhere else where I can set myself at ease and you can feel comfortable too."

He intentionally looked at a direction.

They both rode on the horses and whipped on the horses. - Pah! - They left like flying arrows in the air.

...

When they were gone, a dark yellow rock moved on the other side of the mountain.

A man appeared from the floor like magic. He slapped on his clothes to remove the dust. He looked confused as he murmured, "What was that? Ji Mengzhan is confused, so do I. Why did Zhao Pingtian suddenly change his side? A killer king, he should be so mediocre. Feng Zhiling's words could barely fool a three years old kid. How come Zhao Pingtian trusted him so much?"

He rubbed the head and couldn't figure it out. "I can't imagine how Zhao Pingtian can be an assassin. How can he survive and get his current position? He is a strong cultivator, a killer king, but his mind status... That is..."

"If he isn't stupid, how can he believe Feng Zhiling's shoddy lie? What an unpredictable event now... Unbelievable..."

"Forget it. I should go report to Master first."

He flew up and rushed towards the bamboo forest like a shooting arrow.

"However, Feng Monarch is an outstanding figure, one who

shouldn't be underestimated. I have been hidden there for a long time and even if Zhao Pingtian didn't notice. He actually knew. That look before they left is profound..."

He then disappeared.

...

Wan of Clouds and Xiu of Heavens finally returned. They happily rushed into the bamboo forest.

"Master, we are back."

They were about to get over to Master Bai like they usually did.

However, Master Bai was still showing his back to them. He just blandly answered, "Hmm. Good. You are not needed here. Go get some rests."

He didn't even look back on them. He just looked at the bamboo forest.

The two ladies realized there was something wrong. They looked at each other and thought. [What happened? Master... He is acting so weird.]

Xiu of Heavens was feeling happy at the moment. She realized her master actually cared about her that much. She felt so sweet in

her heart like full of honey. She couldn't pretend nothing happen, so she didn't leave. She rushed over to Master Bai and happily spoke, "Master, I... Ah!"

Before she finished the saying, she shouted.

Xiu of Heavens pointed at Master Bai tremblingly. "Master, you... You... Ah!"

Wan-Er heard it. She hurriedly came over to them. "Xiu-Er, what is it? Why are you being so spoffish... Ah! Ahh!!"

She screamed. It was even louder than Xiu-Er.

It was no longer a handsome face that showed up to them, instead, it was a pig head.

There were some small details that showed them he was Master Bai. Other than that, there was no parts of it that looked like Master Bai at all...

His face was cyan, red, purple and dark. There were all colors but good colors...

[Is it... Is it still our handsome, pretty, gorgeous Master?]

"Master, you... What happened to you? What happened? Has the kady come again?" They asked anxiously. Tears were held in their

eyes.

"Ahem..." Master Bai looked embarrassed. He rubbed the his and said, "It wasn't my mother. It... It was an accident... Oh right. It was an accident..."

"It wasn't the Lady? Who was it then?" Xiu-Er stood up fast and spoke with a fierce look. "I will go get him! How dare!"

"I will go with you!" Wan-Er was raging too.

"How can anybody beat our master into such a pig head?! That is bodacious!"

"That person absolutely went too far!"

...

Chapter 418: Embarrassed Master Bai

The two ladies were furious, as if their anger was flaming high to the sky.

They felt like venting the anger out of their chest even if they had to die for it!

[As long as it wasn't the lady!]

[Whoever is able to beat Master up like this must be a world shocking super cultivator, and he must be from outside this realm. He may be from the highest realm. Maybe he is Master's senior brothers...

So what?

I will fight even if I need to remove the restraint! We need revenge! Even if I can't win even after removing the restraint, I will fight! I will die fighting!

Humph!]

"Don't! Don't hurry." Master Bai stopped them and coughed. He said, "I told you, it was an accident. It was simply an accident! Besides, I do not care about it... Oh right, I have made a hidden attack on the guy who beat me. He must end up worse..."

Master Bai was decisive, so the two ladies had to give it up. Since Master Bai was so sure that the guy would be wounded worse, so they would let him be then.

"Master..." Xiu-Er took out some medical ointment and carefully plastered it on his face. She felt heartbroken and tears came out from her eyes.

Wan-Er was weeping too.

The two world-shocking female heroic figures in thousands years history were, at the moment, acting like two little girls, delicate and touching!

"Who is it? Who did such a thing to you, a kind hearted man. That is vicious..." Wan-Er choked with sobs. "He is so vicious. He beat you up like this.. Who came from the highest realm today? Those lords knew where you were so they came down for you?"

Master Bai was embarrassed. He opened his mouth and wanted to say something, yet he had nothing to say, so he shut it up.

[What do I say?]

[Can I say... That I was beaten by a nobody in this Land of Han-Yang? I got punched so hard that I now look like a pig head?!]

Master Bai sighed and said, "Please relax. It is all skin trauma... Look at you, being anxious. I am fine. Half a day is what I need to

recover. Why are you so upset... You know how fast I can recover from injury."

"I must hurt..." Wan-Er held tears in eyes and said, "Who the hell did this. Look what he did. You lost the shape of a human being..."

Master Bai sighed. [You silly girl. Are you comforting me or annoying me. You should keep it inside your mind. Why say it out loud?!]

[It thought they would return in the afternoon. I should be recovered by then...

Yet unexpectedly, they came back so soon. This is my most embarrassing moment.]

He felt embarrassed, ashamed, and extremely disgraced!

"Why did you come back so soon?" He frowned, a bit unsatisfied.

[If you come back later, you wouldn't see me this way. I wouldn't be so embarrassed...]

"It was Xiu-Er's fault really. She missed you so much. She grabbed me back when she was just a little recovered. She said it was the same to rest back here..." Wan-Er start nagging.

Xiu-Er blushed. She was a bit embarrassed and said, "Why blame

me. You said... Wait. If we didn't come back in time, how could we know Master got beaten..."

[Got beaten...]

Master Bai twisted his mouth.

[That is somehow not a good saying to me...]

[I, Bai Chen, reached the sky and explored the earth, who dares to beat me? Who can beat me?]

Xiu-Er took good care of his face and said, "Master, please just tell us. Who did this to you? You have to let us know. Even though we won't go seek revenge, we have to be defensive to that man."

It was reasonable though.

Master Bai was thinking, [Should I tell them or not?]

That was a good question.

"Did any of the Saint Lords came down here?" Wan-Er was worried.

[They think too much now.]

"Cough, cough..." Master Bai coughed and said, "Ahem. It was... It was the man..."

He was so embarrassed!

"What man?" The two ladies asked at the same time. Four bright pretty eyes shined with glow.

"Ahem... Cough..." Master Bai coughed like he got phthisis. He unwillingly spoke, "Well, it was just... that man... from Ling-Bao Hall... Feng Zhiling.... He did... ahem... He did it."

The two ladies were stunned.

They both had a thought. [Did I hear him wrong or did he say it wrong?]

[How is it possible!]

[Absolutely impossible!]

[Absolutely!]

After a while, Xiu of Heavens cautiously asked, "Master, did you say the man who hurt you this bad is... that Feng Zhiling... of that Ling-Bao Hall... in this Chen-Xing City? Urh..."

Master Bai was speechless. [What do you mean hurt me this bad. Why did you put it this way? It is obviously not that bad! Pah! Still making it worse!]

He didn't totally agree, but he still nodded.

The two ladies looked at each other, like they were in dreams.

[Feng Zhiling... actually beat Master up this hard?]

[That...]

Master Bai was angry and he sighed. He knew he couldn't just let it go. The two ladies were too curious. He decided to be frank, "Look. After you left... Feng Zhiling dropped by. He said he was here for my legs. He said he was checking on me. I offer him some tea, because I wanted to be polite... We had a conversation..."

He tried to explain everything...

He continued, "... He must have been angry with me already. I said something inappropriate and... So... Things went wrong... He took it too seriously..."

While he was speaking, Wan-Er and Xiu-Er looked at each other. They couldn't believe it. They felt less distressed. Instead, they felt like laughing.

[That is what happened.]

They knew so well about their master, so they basically knew everything before Master Bai finished the whole story.

[Our master must be seizing the higher position while he was talking to Feng Zhiling. It annoyed that bodacious Feng Monarch... Now, the mess in Chen-Xing City was all created by Master, the mess that drove Monarch Feng into a desperate situation...]

[Under such circumstance, he put on airs like that and pissed Feng Zhiling. That was a good reason to get mad!]

[Even if Master didn't do anything, that guy had been longing to push Master for a long time...]

...

Chapter 419: Strange!

The two ladies felt relieved when they heard that it was Feng Zhiling.

They knew he wouldn't really hurt Master Bai even if he tried everything he could. He punched Master Bai... Well, so be it. It truly wouldn't harm him anyway; it just made him look bad.

"No matter what, I truly admire this Feng Monarch for his boldness. That is really bodacious, to be honest." Wan-Er and Xiu-Er were wildly laughing. They were like embracing the sunshine after the rainstorm.

It was Xiu-Er who said that.

Wan-Er nodded and agreed. "That's right. How long hasn't Master gotten punched? Three thousand years?"

Xiu-Er frowned and looked up to the sky, thinking, "Let me see. Should be more than that..."

Master Bai was speechless. [I prefer the looks on you both when you are worried. How come you started gloating? What the hell is it?]

Listening to the two ladies giggling and whispering, Master Bai closed his eyes helplessly. He felt even more embarrassed...

[Since when did... I become someone they will laugh at?

Well... I have to admit... that this feels good in some way.

It seems a man cannot always be up in a high position. Sometimes, a joke or embarrassment can be a good way for entertainment. As long as it happens only in front of the people I am close to.]

Master Bai thought.

...

At the moment, that big man in black returned.

"Master, Feng Monarch successfully made his way out and left..." the big guy reported.

Master Bai half closed his eyes and blandly spoke, "Oh. Left? It would be disappointing if he couldn't though. I want details. Did he get hurt before he left..."

"Not really. He didn't get hurt. Things went so strange!" the big guy reported loudly.

"Strange? How?" Master Bai was interested!

"Those men were from the Kingdom of Tianyu, the God Slayer Team. They were all strong figures with high capability. If they fight in a battle, they would be nearly invincible. However, in the fights of true superior cultivators, they are not strong enough..." The guy stopped and then went on, "According to what I saw, Feng Monarch could probably make his own way out from the surrounding of more than a hundred men without help. He would have to endure some injury, but not fatal..."

Master Bai raised his eyebrows and said, "That is reasonable. I don't see anything strange... Oh? You mentioned... He had help in this fight? Is that what you meant strange?"

"You are with wisdom, Master." The guy frowned like he was thinking about how to tell it. After a while, he said, "It was unbelievable. I am still confused... The man who helped him is the No. 3 assassin in the world, Zhao Pingtian with the title killer king..."

"Zhao Pingtian? He helped Feng Zhiling? That is out of expectation... Hmmm. No. According to the information I got, he is hired by the Kingdom of Tianyu. He must be one of the God Slayer Team. Ji Mengzhan, the leader of the team, recruited him. How come? Is there anything wrong about our information..." Xiu of Heavens said.

"Lady Xiu-Er's information is correct. Zhao Pingtian was working for the God Slayer Team. That is exactly why it was so strange. The God Slayer Team made a few attempts to attack but failed. Zhao Pingtian was about to take the turn. At the moment he was about to strike, Feng Monarch said something and made Zhao Pingtian

change his side. He started to help Feng Zhiling!"

The big guy was confused, "The whole thing happened in my eyes. That is just so unbelievable. I can be sure that Feng Zhiling and Zhao Pingtian didn't know each other before today. They could never have planned this together. I am confused. What did he say to make Zhao Pingtian change his mind. I cannot think it through. It is just so strange to me..."

When the big guy said 'God Slayer Team', Wan-Er and Xiu-Er both frowned. They felt disgusted.

They didn't like it, because of the commander of the team!

Ji Mengzhan!

They hadn't met him before, but they felt sick thinking about him.

The big guy had told them something really strange. They were both interested with it. They just ignored the disgusting man and Xiu of Heavens even joined the conversation.

[Zhao Pingtian was a man of the God Slayer Team, but he changed his mind just because something Feng Monarch said?

Normally... A well-known assassin shouldn't do such thing to ruin his own reputation.]

Master Bai was calm and he said blandly, "Feng Monarch, what did he say? What was the situation back then? You were near them. You should have heard it, right? Tell me everything. Don't miss even a bit."

Apparently, Master Bai was also very invested in it.

"Thing was like this..." The guy tried to recall every detail. He told everything that happened between the time from Ye Xiao left the house and he set Ye Xiao up by telling his position.

As he was telling, Master Bai, Wan and Xiu felt that if Zhao Pingtian wasn't a moron, he wouldn't change his side like this!

"... After a few times failure in attacks, Zhao Pingtian asked to make the next attack. The fight was about to begin, but they said something. Nothing strange happened by then. Suddenly, Feng Monarch said something!" The big guy slowly spoke, "He said... 'No assistant? The soft, sweet, gentle girl with a red beauty mole on her forehead, what is she then?'"

He stopped and then said, "That was some nonsense he spoke though."

Master Bai frowned.

Wan-Er frowned and said, "Was there a girl like that beside Zhao Pingtian?"

"If there was, it wouldn't be so strange. I saw it clearly, there was nobody beside him! Absolutely not! People who were there, they were all guys. None of them even looked girly. There was absolutely no women. Feng Zhiling was talking nonsense. That is all. But the nonsense finally made Zhao Pingtian change his side," The big guy affirmatively spoke.

...

Chapter 420: Psychic Eye

Wan-Er and Xiu-Er both said, "Ah? It is strange."

"After what Feng Zhiling said, Zhao Pingtian just turned against the team?" Master Bai asked, "What did he look like? What did he say? Try to recall everything. Don't miss any details!"

The big guy lowered his head and thought for a while. He told the story again. As he spoke, Master Bai's eyes lit up.

While Master Bai was frowning, lost in thoughts, the wounds on his face were quickly vanishing.

He became white and handsome again, not a pig head anymore.

Finally, his eyes lit up as he murmured, "Feng Zhiling always amaze me... He has the Psychic Eye? In this low realm, there is actually people who has such a mysterious power. How strange!"

Wan-Er and Xiu-Er turned over at the same time, "Psychic Eye? How come..."

Master Bai lightly nodded. "Why not! There is no other reasonable explanation. Do you really thing Zhao Pingtian would just give up to some words his enemy said? He is not that stupid!"

Xiu-Er confusedly said, "Master is right. However, whoever has

Psychic Eye in a low realm should be children, and these kids are mostly unhealthy because they can see things that do not exist in real world. As they grow up, they will lose the Psychic Eye... Feng Monarch is not even young. How can he keep that power?"

Master Bai blandly spoke, "He surely has his own way to keep it. The methods to cultivate Psychic Eye usually only exist in extremely high realms. There are not many methods. However, he accidentally got to learn one of the methods in this world and he cultivated well it. That should be a fair explanation about this strange issue!"

"That's right. If he cultivates it well, he can not only see things in Yin world, but also connect the Yin and Yang, these two worlds. It is not so extraordinary though..." Xiu-Er said, "Ghost and spirits seem hilarious to normal people, however, only superior cultivators can know that transmigration truly exists. Souls are real, then ghosts are real too."

Wan-Er nodded and said, "That's right. This Rou-Er must be the most important person to Zhao Pingtian. She may be the reason why he is always desperate and hopeless. Feng Zhiling used it to make him change his side!"

Xiu-Er said, "I think it is more than important. She must be the one he loves the most and cares the most. Master, I will go fetch all the files about Zhao Pingtian. There should be something to dig for."

Master Bai blandly spoke, "In fact, there is no need to do more research now. Zhao Pingtian will very likely become Feng Zhiling's

man. Well, better late than never though. To understand Zhao Pingtian will help us in the future when we deal with him."

Xiu-Er left.

Wan-Er said, "Master, you are so sure that Zhao Pingtian will become Feng Zhiling's man. Let's send out a man who can fight Zhao Pingtian to keep it balanced."

Master Bai nodded to agree.

...

Ye Xiao and Zhao Pingtian were riding on the horses, rushing in the same speed. They had just moved for about seven miles, but they had already encountered seven groups of men who wanted to take Feng Zhiling's head. However, he didn't need to do anything because Zhao Pingtian was trying everything he could to protect Feng Zhiling. He was killing all the way along. Blood sprayed and heads rolled on the floor.

It apparently wouldn't last forever. There were too many people who wanted to kill Feng Zhiling in the city. More would come.

Zhao Pingtian was a killer king indeed, but he was after human being. A man would always be exhausted. How could he defend all those people that never ended!

Ye Xiao just covered his face with a napkin.

It looked kind of weird wearing a mask on the face in day time. It looked stupid.

However, better to be stupid than to be the target.... Nobody knew that this man with mask on his face who looked like a mad man was exactly Feng Monarch of Ling-Bao Hall.

He was the person everybody wanted recently.

Zhao Pingtian was enlightened, so he put on a mask too.

He was blotted with blood, like a bloody madman. He had a big title, so he would definitely be recognized if he didn't cover himself.

If Zhao Pingtian showed up somewhere, nobody would care about it. After all, no one wanted to die messing with the killer king.

However, things were different now. News spread fast. Everybody knew that to catch Zhao Pingtian, it would lead to Feng Monarch.

It was weird to put on a mask, but at least they wouldn't be recognized easily.

Ye Xiao did it first, so Zhao Pingtian just followed him!

The two of them, during daytime, were wearing a mask that people usually wore at night. Under others' sneering, taunting and pitying, they were even running away.

When they got to a small tavern, they finally finished the weird trip.

They got off the horses and gave the horses to a poor family casually before they walked in the tavern.

Ye Xiao asked for a decent room and got into the room with Zhao Pingtian. He took some clothes out of the space ring and made a change. They didn't stop in the tavern though. As soon as they were ready, they rushed out through the window and then disappeared in the sky.

There was another tavern near this one. Ye Xiao was being generous. He gave the keeper a note of a thousand taels of silver to take the entire tavern for one day.

It wasn't time for food and drinks so there was nobody in the tavern.

Such a tavern couldn't barely earn a thousand in a year. Now they met a rich guest Ye Xiao, and the keeper nearly laughed like a flower. He didn't say anything but just closed the tavern. He knew what to do himself. He left the tavern too.

He closed the door and left the two rich lords to have their conversation in private.

Ye Xiao and Zhao Pingtian sat opposite to each other. There were a few dishes in front of them and wine too. They could easily reach them.

...

Chapter 421: Past Is Like the Wind

"I don't drink," Zhao Pingtian said.

"I do," Ye Xiao said, "it is destiny that put us together. We must celebrate it with liquor. Besides, to listen to your story without liquor, it feels something is lacking. It would be boring."

Zhao Pingtian was shocked. He was stunned and then he said, "True. I will drink then."

He then took a jar of liquor and raised his head. Within seconds, he drank it up.

Ye Xiao was shocked. [What the hell! You said you don't drink? This is more than you drink! No other man can drink if this is what you call don't drink!]

Zhao Pingtian put down the jar and stared at Ye Xiao firmly. He said, "Feng Monarch, let me ask you. Can you really see Rou-Er? My Rou-Er?"

Ye Xiao operated the Yin Yang Eyes again and looked around Zhao Pingtian.

He saw a girl with softness in that grey fog looking back at him, with expectation.

"I don't know if she is your Rou-Er or not. I do see a girl with a mole on her forehead. She is just beside you." Ye Xiao nodded to confirm.

Zhao Pingtian smiled, "Really? Rou-Er, have you always been around me? I didn't know. God truly blesses me so much!"

The girl in the grey fog sighed as she looked at Zhao Pingtian with tears.

Ye Xiao said, "Brother Zhao, may I ask what is going on? I think if I know all of this, I can give you... more help!"

Zhao Pingtian was thrilled. He grabbed the jar and drank more. He said, "Even if you didn't ask, I will tell you about this... You... Ah... It is my biggest regret though... I don't where to begin..."

He took in a deep breath. He looked lost. It was like all of a sudden. He had returned to the old days, the days that he would never forget...

...

"Rou-Er was my fiancée..." Zhao Pingtian took in a long breath. His eyes were full of softness.

"Back then, I was an intellectual. All I did was reading and writing. I was hoping one day I could pass the examination to become an official in the court... Rou-Er was a girl from the village

beside mine. We grew up together. Our parents knew we liked each other, so we were engaged..."

"When I was eighteen, Rou-Er was seventeen. We were preparing the wedding..." Zhao Pingtian bitterly smiled. Deep in his eyes, there was both softness and pain, "... We were village kids. We never wanted much. We played together all the time. When we were about fifteen, we all knew something about love and marriage. We had a distant time, but then we stayed together all the time again... We never thought anything would go wrong..."

"We were so happy together. Our hearts bonded together. Rou-Er had already made her own wedding dress..."

"However, suddenly, there was that day, I went to the river in her village... It was the place we went out for date. We kept from others' sights all the time and we met there, just the two of us. I went there everyday in those days, but Rou-Er didn't show up. It never happened before..."

"I thought she must be shy because we were about to get married, so I decided to be patient. After a few days, I couldn't bear it anymore. I wanted to see her so much. I went to her home and saw her father. I thought that since we were about to marry each other, even if she didn't want to see me, I would just have a secret look at her..."

Zhao Pingtian sighed. He looked in the distance, stunned.

He stopped talking.

Ye Xiao didn't urge him though. He just had his drinks. Two cups to be drunk up, he sighed. [Things must have gone wrong after this then.]

He looked up at the girl in the grey fog. The girl was looking at Zhao Pingtian with sorrow. She didn't even blink.

"That day... I saw Rou-Er. She was so happy, with a young man, holding his hand. They looked so close to each other. She wasn't even that close to me... When I saw them, Rou-Er's face turned pale..."

"I guess you can understand how I felt that moment. I... I..." Zhao Pingtian was so grievous that he lowered his head, "... I raged and got over to them. I questioned her who that man was. I asked her what relationship they had."

"Rou-Er looked at me indifferently. She said she had always treated me like a brother. She didn't... didn't see me as a lover. And... And..." Zhao Pingtian said, "Rou-Er said that she never felt safe with me. She didn't know what kind of man she liked until she met that guy... I... I was just someone passing by in her life. I was a man who wouldn't have destiny to be with her!"

"She loved a powerful man, a hero... She said an intellectual was useless in miserable times! She asked me would I fight somebody with books if troubles came to us! Intellectuals were the weakest in the world!"

"She said that a girl needed safety. The man beside her was in top levels of Human Origin Stage... I had no money or power. I was just a poor young man. I was proud about what I had as an intellectual, but I was never able to get any position in the court..."

"All in all, I was a man without future."

"She said, brother, I won't upset you. If you are a superior cultivator, it is fine for me to marry you. But... You are not..."

"She said, 'If you are not, maybe you can be rich. That will work too. If you don't have money, a bright future will work too. If you don't have that too, you may be strong and powerful. Nothing. You have nothing! How can I end up with you? How do I dare to be with you? Should I go starve at home with you? Love won't feed. And there is no love!'"

When he said that, he was self-mocking. He was sad but not angry; even the girl he loved sneered him.

Ye Xiao didn't feel surprised though. He knew that there must be something wrong in this issue.

"I was desperate. I asked her if she really decided to be with that guy. I asked her, are you going to forget everything about us, as if it is like wind?"

Zhao Pingtian bitterly smiled. "Rou-Er said that... The man beside her needed to cultivate three more years before he could get

married. Three years later, it would be the day they got married... She said, 'Brother, if you can defeat him three years later, maybe I will marry you.'

...

Chapter 422: Yin Yang Fruits

"She said that... 'There IS only one martial sect in the town that still recruits disciples. If you really like me, why don't you go be their disciple? If you know nothing but reading and writing, maybe you will be working in the court someday, but to be honest, you are just afraid of bearing hardships in the martial world. I won't marry a coward...'"

Ye Xiao couldn't help but sigh when he heard that.

He knew there must be something behind all that, but those words still hurt. Every man would be hurt when hearing those words, if he was a real man.

"I was furious. I shouted, 'Wait and see! I am going to learn martial art now! I will defeat this man three years later! You know what, even after I defeat him, I won't marry you! You are cruel, I am too...'"

Zhao Pingtian bitterly smiled. He grabbed the jar again and drank a lot. He emptied the jar.

Ye Xiao thought, [What a good drinker! The jar is empty, if not, he will keep drinking it up! He said he doesn't drink. My god. He normally doesn't, but when he does, he drinks up the ocean!]

"That day, I left her home. I felt the entire sky was dark... I was heartless. I was mad..." Zhao Pingtian looked painful on his slim face. "I ran back home and told my parents I would learn martial

art... My parents sighed but didn't stop me... I was so stupid... I was really stupid..."

Zhao Pingtian sighed... The expression of regret on his face made Ye Xiao feel sad too.

"I never really thought about it. Rou-Er had always liked me that much. How would she be like that all of a sudden? Her parents always treated me like their own child, how would they possibly be so indifferent to me? My parents always supported me to be an intellectual, why didn't they stop me when I told them I wanted to be a cultivator? They even supported me?"

"I must be the world's No. 1 fool!" Zhao Pingtian was full of regret. He kept hitting his head. "Why didn't I think deeper about all that happened that time! Why would I go mad and ignore everything! I was heartless. Maybe that's why I couldn't see those strange signs!"

"The next day, I packed up my stuff and went to look for my master... At that moment, the Bright Heart Sect was selecting qualified young people as their indirect disciples..."

"When I got there, because I was born with good potential, it didn't seem so difficult and I got selected. That night, my father held a farewell dinner for me... Her... Her father came too... He brought some gifts and some notes of silver. He said I would need it on my way... I was full of anger. I didn't think too much... In fact, I shouted like dogs unscrupulously. I threw out the notes and kicked him out. I shouted, 'If I succeed in the martial world, I won't marry your daughter. Why are you here? Get the fxck off

here..."

"He was stooping, staggering out. That moment... Every time when I dream about him, I see him staggering away with his back on me, and I want to cry. I want to beat myself to death, cut my tongue off! How could I! How could I say those words to him! I was such an animal! I was a monster with no heart..."

"The notes of fifty taels was all he had at that time. Things were so strange, yet I actually didn't notice any. I..."

"After I went to Bright Heart Sect, I practiced like mad. Maybe it was potential, or maybe I worked hard enough, I went out off the league and became the outstanding one. Only within one year, I reached level 3 of Human Origin Stage. The next year, I reached level 7 of Human Origin Stage... I kept working so hard. The hatred in my heart drove me to. I endured every hardship. I only wanted one thing, to be stronger, to be a powerful man..."

"The third year, things changed. When I was working in the cultivation room, I worked too much and my body couldn't bear it. I felt dizzy all the time. It slowed me down. One day, I was cultivating behind the mountain. I fainted and fell down the cliff... That was my good fortune though. There were Yin Yang Fruits under the cliff. It was ripe..."

Yin Yang Fruits.

Ye Xiao was shocked. He then bitterly smiled.

Such a dramatic scene actually happened on Zhao Pingtian. He fell down the cliff and didn't die, instead he found a precious treasure...

Yin Yang Fruits were no ordinary objects. They only grew in extremely cold places. Yang Fruit was red; if cultivators ate one, they would acquire sixty-year worth of cultivation. A rookie could become a superior cultivator in one night! It was one step to the sky!

It was an extremely precious item, which was nearly impossible to find. Only those who had great lucks could meet one.

Zhao Pingtian actually had that luck. He got the fruit when he fell down the cliff...

That was such a miracle.

The Yin Fruit grew beside the Yang Fruit. It had totally different efficacy though.

Yang Fruit was for living men. It improved a man with sixty-year worth of cultivation. Yin Fruit, living men should never eat it. It was said Yin Fruit was for ghosts... Nobody knew if it was true, but it was true that no living men should eat it. Many men died in the history because they didn't believe!

Zhao Pingtian was lucky.

He wasn't an experienced and informed man back then. He couldn't tell which one he could eat and which one he couldn't!

He might eat the Yang Fruit first and got boosted in cultivation, but how would he not eat the other one later. Ordinary people would never know that one of them was good, while the other was like poison!

"I accidentally fell off the cliff. I thought I would die but I didn't. I didn't even get hurt so bad. Only my leg was injured a little bit. I couldn't use my leg, so I couldn't walk. There was no way out of that place anyway. I was trapped for days, and I was starving. I felt dizzy. Suddenly, I smelled something. It smelled so good. I looked for the thing that produced the scent. It was a red fruit. I didn't think much and just took it before swallowing it directly."

...

Chapter 423: Hard to Turn Down True Feelings!

"I was starving. Even if it was poisonous and I knew it, I would eat it. It was better to die full than die hungry. After eating that fruit, I felt full of energy. The wounds were cured. I got up and found that there was another fruit on the other side. That one was black."

"I was cured and my cultivation capability was improved a great deal. I easily climbed up to get the other fruit and returned to my sect. I told my master about it, then my master told me that I got the Yin Yang Fruits. I ate the Yang Fruit and didn't take the other one. That was my good luck..."

"In the three months after that, I digested all the energy from the Yang Fruit. I became invincible in my sect. Even my master and the elders in the sect couldn't defeat me. I had digested all the energy from the Yang Fruit. I was level 8 of Earth Origin Stage. I became one of the top league..."

"I couldn't wait, so I left the mountain. It was less than three years yet... I wanted to find Rou-Er and tell her that I was already a superior cultivator. I was a big figure in the martial world... The only thing I wanted was to tell her that I could give her safety, I could give her a bright future, but I wouldn't marry her! She didn't deserve me! I wanted to call her superficial woman..."

"But... The day when I went back..." Zhao Pingtian took in a deep breath. Tears in his eyes nearly dropped down.

"When I went back home... My father told me that Rou-Er was dead... Seven days before I was back. The day I went back home was the seventh day from Rou-Er's death..."

He turned silent and lowered his head.

- Drip. - A drop of tear dripped into his jar!

"My father told me the everything about that day. I got to know the truth. I never had thought it would be like that... Before the wedding, Rou-Er had a strange disease. She started to lose hair, and then she became weaker and weaker... She had seen some famous doctors. It was Jing Mai Necrosis... It was incurable. The only thing she could do was to become weaker and weaker until... until she died... with extreme pain..."

"When Rou-Er knew she got such a disease, she came up with a plan to force me to leave... She didn't want me to see her suffer. She knew if I knew the truth, I would never leave her... I would marry her... But she didn't want to be my burden... She would rather kept be living in lies..."

"If I stayed at my hometown, I would definitely find out..."

"That was why she asked her cousin's help, to put on a play... She wanted me to leave, to practice martial art... She made a three years term, because she knew that she would die in three years... As long as nobody told me the truth, I would just live well with hatred. She preferred I hated her my whole life, than I living in

misery..."

"She didn't know that I went back half a year earlier and got to know everything..."

"She thought that... As time passed by, even if I knew the truth, I would have forgotten her already... She hoped that I would marry a good girl... and have a good life... Rou-Er, my Rou-Er..."

Tears on his face.

"My father said... Before Rou-Er died, she had suffered so much that she barely looked like a human being. When she died, she was less than twenty kilogram weight... The last thing she said before she died..."

Zhao Pingtian choked with sobs. "She said... I miss my Brother Tian... I miss him so much... I miss him so bad... But... Please... Please don't tell him about this..."

"She didn't forget it even before she died. She didn't want to hurt my feeling... Even though she had to let me hate her for my life..."

"If I could go back home seven days earlier, maybe I could see her for the last time... However, I was seven days late. What I could see was nothing but a pile of dirt... I lost the chance to see her again forever!"

"I ran out like a madman and ran to her tomb. I went to see her. I

wanted to see her. I wanted to marry her. I don't care what she becomes. I want her to be my wife... Even for one day! One day is enough!"

"When I got there... All I could see was a small grave mound. There was even no grass on it yet. I was just late for several days! What I could see was only a pile of dirt. My Rou-Er. My Rou-Er. She suffered so much. Now she lies in there, buried... She didn't even see me when she died. She still worried that I would be sad if I knew the truth. She wanted me to live in lies to have a happy life..."

"I could feel... How she suffered for the two years... I could imagine how much she missed me, how much she wanted to see me, how much she wanted my comfort. But I... All I had for her was hatred. I never went home... Every time when I thought of her, I felt hate... When she died, she must be so lonely..."

"She was my beloved one! I am such an asshole. I don't deserve her. I don't! I don't!" Zhao Pingtian wept, but he looked wooden. It must be extremely painful for him.

Only when one felt excruciating pain would he feel like this.

His heart was broken!

Ye Xiao sighed deeply. He felt sour in the nose.

He was moved. He had always been calm and steady, yet he was

touched!

He slowly looked up and looked at the grey fog. The gentle and soft girl was looking at Zhao Pingtian obsessively. She was so concentrated, like nothing else mattered in her eyes. All she could see was Zhao Pingtian. Only Zhao Pingtian...

She reached her hand, wanting to wipe the tears on Zhao Pingtian. Her pretty hand went through his face. He didn't feel anything. She was heartbroken. She kept touching his hair, but he didn't feel anything at all...

Two true lovers, thinking about each other, yet couldn't communicate, on two sides of a partition!

The Yin World and the Yang World were exactly blocked by such a partition!

No matter what people did to break it, it never worked.

"What then?" Ye Xiao asked.

...

Chapter 424: I Beg Your Help!

"And then..." Zhao Pingtian gave a better smile, "I dug her grave like I was crazy. I wanted to see her. But what I saw was only the dead body of her, that was skinny like skeleton... She just lied there quietly, with no sense of living... I spat out blood... and fainted away..."

"I lied in the grave, wanting to stay with her... I wouldn't get out... Till her parents and mine kneeled down to beg me..."

"I got out. I really didn't want to, but I had to. Rou-Er was gone. Our parents were still living. I couldn't break their hearts again. I had to get out and take care of them... I didn't know what I could do for the rest of my life... I put the Yin Fruit in her grave... I knew it was for a ghost, so I left it for Rou-Er!"

"I put it on her body. The fruit gradually vanished, like it had entered into her body. That moment, I thought gods blessed me. I even dreamt about it. I was improved sixty years in cultivation when I ate the Yang Fruit. Maybe she would return from death if she ate the Yin Fruit. She would come back and be with me again. However, reality is cruel. She didn't come back. The Yin Fruit was gone, but nothing happened! Why! Why was nothing changed! She had gotten the Yin Fruit! Why? Ah! Why! Why can't you bless me, god!"

Zhao Pingtian got thrilled. He grabbed on Ye Xiao's collar, questioning him, drunk with red eyes, "Why, why, why, why, why? Why! Do you know why? Please tell me why!"

Ye Xiao quietly looked at him. He then looked at the soft girl in the grey fog. He sighed and said, "Brother Zhao, you have no idea... The Yin Fruit has worked. Rou-Er didn't return from death, but she has been with you in another way. You just have no idea!"

This moment, Ye Xiao finally realized what had happened to Zhao Pingtian and why things were so weird about him.

When people died, their souls vanished, and a bit of their true spirit would go into the Nine Serene World to get transmigration...

The girl Zhao Pingtian loved, Rou-Er, still had her soul, and there was a mass of grey fog protecting her. She had been with Zhao Pingtian and she seemed so physical.

Even in daytime, she could still stay beside Zhao Pingtian. She never left.

That was the reason!

Zhao Pingtian put the Yin Fruit into Rou-Er's grave.

Rou-Er hadn't died long when he did. It was only seven days! A big part of her soul must have remained at that time. It absorbed the spiritual qi from the Yin Fruit. That was why she became like this. When the last bit of one's soul was about to vanish, it was the time she remembered the best. Rou-Er made the mutation and kept all her memory. That was a miracle.

The two fruits they took were from one tree. They were born a pair.

Things were destined sometimes. Yang Fruit saved Zhao Pingtian, while Yin Fruit saved Rou-Er!

They were in two different worlds, but while one was fighting in the world, the other had always been accompanying him...

They were literally inseparable in life and death!

Things could always be so marvelous!

"Yin Fruit worked? What do you mean? Rou-Er has been with me all the time? How is it possible. What are you talking about. If she is with me, how come I never see her. What exactly are you talking about?" Zhao Pingtian asked hurriedly.

"Alas. You miss her, she stares at you. She sees you often but cannot touch you, while you miss her a lot but have no idea she has been with you all the time. There is nothing more sorrowful than this in the world! Do you know why I can see the lady?" Ye Xiao blandly said, "Because of you. You put the Yin Fruit on Rou-Er's body. The fruit got into her body. It didn't bring her back to life, but it nourished her soul a lot. She didn't get transmigration, instead, she lives in another form and she has been with you all these days."

"That is why I can see her."

The girl in the fog nodded.

"Are you serious? Rou-Er is with me and has been with me all these days?" Zhao Pingtian was surprised. He looked at Ye Xiao. "So, you really see her? Tell me, what... what does she look like now?"

Ye Xiao looked at the girl. The girl was a bit shy and she lowered her head. And then she bravely raised up her head while looking at Ye Xiao in the eyes. Apparently, she wanted Ye Xiao to tell her beloved one how she looked right now...

"She is wearing white clothes. She is skinny. Double knots on her hair. The one in the right is a bit crooked. She looks pretty. She is from a normal family. She looks pretty and sweet..."

Ye Xiao described it slowly.

Zhao Pingtian interrupted him. He was so excited. "Yes! Yes! That is right! She is my Rou-Er! When we were kids, Rou-Er and I went out and she fell down and got her head hit on the ground. There was a wound on her right head. Since then, she always tried to cover the wound with the knot... Feng Monarch... You..."

Zhao Pingtian stood up and got close to Ye Xiao. He kneeled. "Monarch Feng! Please! Please help me. You must have a way for me to see her! Let me see her! Just for one sight! Please! I am begging you!"

The killer king was now without any hesitation. Despite his dignity and glory, he kneeled down to other!

He just wanted to see his beloved one so much.

That was all!

In the grey fog, the girl was crying, shaking. She cried and cried, looking at the man she loved who was on his knees. Her heart was broken. She slowly kneeled down to the floor.

She knew Ye Xiao could see her.

She couldn't communicate with Ye Xiao, so she showed him that she was begging too!

Ye Xiao held Zhao Pingtian up hurriedly. "What are you doing? You just helped me! For the true love of you two, anything I can do, I will try my best for you. Please get up. Get up and talk."

...

Chapter 425: Two Possible Methods

Zhao Pingtian didn't get up. He was still on his knees, not even moving a bit. He said, "Feng Monarch, never say that it is just simple favor. As long as you can let me see Rou-Er, I will serve you forever with my life!"

Ye Xiao took in a deep breath. He frowned and thought, and then said, "To be honest, I can see Rou-Er because I got the talent. I don't use any special martial art for it. I really have no idea how to make you see her right now, but I will try my best. Can you get up please. It takes time. You know how hard it is. Yin and Yang, two different worlds. It is the rule of nature. Nobody can break it easily. However, since I can see her, it means there must be solutions. As long as we find one, problem will be solved. It just takes time..."

He threw up his hands. "But if you really want to see her so badly, I truly can't help you. You have to give me some time to think... In fact, if we think deeper, Rou-Er has been living like this for many years and didn't disappear. That is the hope that you two will see each other again in the future. Although I haven't had a plan yet, if we do it right, it will be solved someday. The Yin Fruit makes Lady Rou-Er live in this world. Maybe there is something that can bring her back to reality and make her stand on the earth again..."

Ye Xiao stopped.

Zhao Pingtian understood it. Ye Xiao wasn't going to turn him away. He was saying all that with his heart. That gave Zhao Pingtian great hope!

Zhao Pingtian kowtowed all of a sudden.

- Bang! -

He didn't operate any art to protect himself. As he kowtowed and hit on the floor, blood came out on his head!

"Feng Monarch! I beg you!"

He kneeled down on the floor, with his head touching the floor. He wouldn't get up!

This man had been so proud. He was a legend in the assassination world in this land—the killer king. At this moment, he had no hesitation. [Even if I need to be ten thousand times more menial than this, I will! As long as I can see Rou-Er again, I will!]

[I will give up everything to see her again!]

[I will give up my life if it needs me to!]

Ye Xiao frowned. He couldn't be sure.

[Why is this man so stubborn. I have said everything. Why is he still acting like this? Doesn't he understand my language?]

He then spoke in a low voice, "Zhao Pingtian, can you just get up first. A man can do limited things. To give up your dignity won't help. A man should have a man's way to do things. Get up. Besides, if you don't get up, I don't mind you, but Rou-Er is on her knees too. Do you really want her to endure this? Is it because you cannot see her, so you would just let her be?"

Apparently, he didn't know how to convince him anymore. He had to use his love on this!

"Rou-Er'?" Zhao Pingtian confusedly spoke while looking around.

The girl in the grey fog looked at him. Her eyes were full of sorrow.

"Feng Monarch, please help us! Please!" Zhao Pingtian kowtowed again. And then he finally stood up, looking at Ye Xiao.

Ye Xiao sighed and said, "Lady Rou-Er, please get up too. I have promised you, so I will try everything I can. I just need some time. It concerns the two worlds of Yin and Yang. Nothing comes easy..."

The girl stood up too. Her eyes were full of trust on Ye Xiao.

Zhao Pingtian sat opposite to Ye Xiao, looking at him. In his eyes, there was trust, and eagerness as well.

The girl looked at Ye Xiao with eagerness in her eyes too. They both knew this might be the only hope they had.

Ye Xiao thought for a while. He still couldn't decide.

After a while, he sighed. He said, "Brother Zhao, I know you two are both eager to see each other, but it is the law of nature we are going to break. There may be solutions, but to break the law of nature, it must be very dangerous. The odds is just next to none!"

Zhao Pingtian was thrilled. "There truly is solution!"

He apparently just ignored all the words like 'dangerous', 'next to none'.

He only heard this: there may be solutions!

[As long as there is a solution!]

Ye Xiao sighed and said, "There are two solutions that can solve your problem. Two ways, I would say."

And then he turned quiet. There were two methods indeed, but none of them was easy. They were both difficult like walking to the firmament! Either of them would bring them fatal danger!

Zhao Pingtian was so excited. Of course, he knew that good things were hard to get. However, he met Feng Zhiling today. When he realized Feng Zhiling could see Rou-Er, he couldn't be more hopeful than any time. As long as there was hope, he

wouldn't give it up. Now that there were two methods, he surely felt overjoyed!

It was a delightful surprise to have one possible method, but there were two now!

"The first one should be safer. It brings lower risk... Well, I will have to break her spirit with mysterious way, and then I will use nine Supreme Soul Protection Dan beads on her spirit. And then I will send her to reincarnation. After a few years, you will be able to see her. Well, she will still have the same soul, but with a new face. As for how she will look like, that is god's decision to make."

"It is a safer way, but there are conditions... We need a superior cultivator who are beyond level 5 of Dao Origin Stage. We need him to use his spiritual power to use the nine dan beads to forcibly push her into the tunnel of transmigration. She will be reborn so quickly that she won't lose any memory of this life!"

"There are three difficulties in this method. First is the Supreme Soul Protection Dan. I can solve it though. Nothing difficult for me. Second, we need a Dao Origin Stage cultivator who would like to help us. There is absolutely none in the Land of Han-Yang. We may need to go to the higher realm and get help. Third... this plan will lower the risk on Rou-Er in the biggest extent, but the superior cultivator who helps will get divine thunder punishment because he breaks the law of Yin Yang. He may lose more than half of his capability. I don't think any Dao Origin Stage cultivator will be happy to help, unless there is some special reason."

"If we fail, Rou-Er will lose her soul and spirit. The superior

cultivator will die, leaving no soul too."

Ye Xiao slowly spoke.

Zhao Pingtian gritted with his teeth. He turned silent. And then he said, "May I ask what is a Dao Origin Stage cultivator? Is it a higher stage beyond Sky Origin Stage?"

...

Chapter 426: Harder Than Touching the Sky!

Ye Xiao was stunned. After a while, he came back to himself. He realized that although Zhao Pingtian was killer king in the Land of Han-Yang, he had never met cultivators in higher stages.

"You are in the master levels of Sky Origin Stage right? Top of the Sky Origin Stage?" Ye Xiao asked.

"Yes." Zhao Pingtian nodded.

"Beyond Sky Origin Stage, there is Spirit Origin Stage. Nine levels in Spirit Origin Stage. Another stage higher is Dream Origin Stage. It also has nine levels. Dao Origin Stage is the stage beyond Dream Origin Stage. It also has nine levels. In this stage, one level means one heaven, so it is said!"

Ye Xiao blandly spoke, "The gods people believe in here are just some Spirit Origin Stage cultivators. There once were some Dream Origin Stage cultivators who showed up in the Land of Han-Yang, but they are not natives. They are all from higher realms. They came here by accident, and their capability were beyond the limitation of this world already. That is why when somebody breaks through Sky Origin Stage, he can fly up to the upper realm..."

Zhao Pingtian's face changed.

It became pale and ghastly!

His heart was filled with despair at the moment.

He had been through a lot of difficulties to reach level 9 of Sky Origin Stage, but he had never thought that there were actually other stages beyond this. There was the Spirit Origin Stage, which had nine levels. To break through one level in Spirit Origin Stage must be a hundred times, no, a thousand times even ten thousand times harder than in Sky Origin Stage. Beyond that, there was Dream Origin Stage. The difficulty to upgrade in this stage must be enormous... As for Dao Origin Stage...

Zhao Pingtian didn't even dare thinking about it.

A Dao Origin Stage cultivator was not enough at the moment. They needed a cultivator beyond level 5 of Dao Origin Stage to make their plan practical. None of such cultivators hadn't been cultivating for thousands of years! They all had suffered a lot to get their achievements today!

How would people like that help Zhao Pingtian? Besides, whoever gave him this favor might suffer a divine wrath. He might lose over half of his cultivation capability!

No cultivators would be willing to sacrifice that much. Besides, he might even lose his soul!

The first plan was apparently not a good one. It had the

possibility to succeed, and it was the safer one for Rou-Er, but it was next to impossibility!

Zhao Pingtian was in despair. He lowered his head and kept silent. Suddenly, he asked in a low voice, "What is the second one then?"

Ye Xiao said, "The second plan is to make a Yin Dan. We will build the physical shape for Rou-Er with Yin Dan! We make her turn from a ghost shape into a physical shape! If this plan succeeds, Rou-Er will not have a true human body, but she will appear in life. You will be able to see her. You may even touch her in some way. Besides, Rou-Er will start to cultivate her soul only. If she cultivates well and get some great achievement someday, you two will live together for your life!"

Zhao Pingtian took in a deep breath. He was happy to hear it, yet he knew there must be more than that.

There were so many good sides in the second plan, and that meant it might be even more difficult than the first one.

Ye Xiao continued, "To make Yin Dan is the most unpleasant task for all dan makers in history. Nobody wants to make it. It is too difficult to collect all of its materials, but that is not the biggest difficulty. The dan maker whoever successfully make Yin Dan will ten thousand percent sure to suffer divine wrath. Whoever makes such thing that should never exist in the real world, Yang World, is surely bound to be punished!"

Zhao Pingtian's face looked worse and worse. He was an experienced cultivator. Of course, he knew how horrible the divine wrath was. Divine hardship, divine penalty and divine wrath were always the most terrifying things all cultivators were afraid of. Divine hardship was something a cultivator would definitely encounter when he was about to reach a certain new level. Divine penalty was for those who did something shouldn't be done in the world. Divine wrath was most different. Only those who acted against god's will and led severe consequences would suffer from it!

Master Bai was a super powerful cultivator. He was in a position that Ye Xiao couldn't even look up to no matter how he tried. However, since he had suffered divine wrath, he became a cripple and was too weak to even kill a chicken!

There was a saying about the three divine punishments, 'divine hardship is easy; divine penalty is hard; divine wrath never let pass'. Divine hardship was only correspondingly easy though. Divine wrath truly never let pass. There were only few people who could survive it!

Zhao Pingtian understood it. He knew Ye Xiao was a master dan maker, but he just didn't think it appropriate to ask for help on this!

Ye Xiao was a bit embarrassed and he said, "Brother Zhao, I do have the capability to make Yin Dan, and I am also willing to help you too. However... It is rather difficult to collect all the materials. There are nine materials that are most difficult to find. First one is the Ninefold Netherworld Water. It takes three days to deal with

it, and I will have to change the water three times during the process. Second one is three pistils of the River Yond Flower. Third one is Nine Gloomy Grass of the Nine Gloomy Gates. Fourth is the Abyss Jade of the Abyss Bridge in hell. Fifth is the Dark Soul Root from the Homesick Gaze Stage, or the Triple Color Leaf of the netherworld..."

He had just said the first five materials, but Zhao Pingtian had already felt dizzy. He looked pale in face, like there was no blood in him at all.

He still stood straight up, gritted with his teeth and said, "What else? What are the other four?"

"The rest are not from the netherworld anymore. They are, Nine Cloud Jade Ganoderma, Green Heaven's Grass, Death Bacteria Ginseng and a level 9 spiritual beast's inner core, and the inner core has to be over a thousand years old..."

Ye Xiao bitterly smiled. "The first five materials are all in the netherworld. Nine Cloud Jade Ganoderma and Green Heaven's Grass are from the Heaven's Realm. Death Bacteria Ginseng is the easiest one actually. It can always be found in a place where there are lots of dead people and is filled with cold qi. The beast's inner core, it can be found in the Qing-Yun Realm. However, such beast that has a thousand years old inner core is unbelievably strong. No man under Dao Origin Stage can kill it and take its inner core..."

After Ye Xiao explained the two plans, Rou-Er in the grey fog and Zhao Pingtian were both gloomy and speechless. They looked pale in their faces.

For them, the two plans were both harder than touching the sky!
It was simply impossible!

Ye Xiao said, "The Soul Protection Dan for the first plan, I can make it. The materials, we just need to spend some time to collect them patiently. We can make it after all. It is difficult to find a Dao Origin Stage cultivator to help us, but if we prepare to pay a huge price and if we get a great good luck someday, it is possible... Maybe Brother Zhao, you can reach level 5 of Dao Origin Stage someday if you work harder. Then you can help Rou-Er to rebirth by yourself. That is a great thing to do. That is about the first plan. If we work hard enough, with a bit of luck, I think we will make it someday!"

...

Chapter 427: Once a Year

"The second plan, the difficult thing is to collect the materials. If we work hard, maybe we can still make it someday. You don't need to worry about making it. I promised you, so I will try my best to. Divine wrath doesn't scare me. Materials for Yin Dan are difficult to find, but we don't need to despair about it..."

Ye Xiao said, "The inner core of the spiritual beast, I am sure I can get it. It all depends on man effort. We don't need to worry too much about the first step. I can promise about the inner core. The other eight, I don't have confidence now. However, there is something we can do... There is a realm beyond Land of Han-Yang, Qing-Yun Realm. In Qing-Yun Realm, there are three martial courts. Every once in a hundred years, the martial courts will open. At that time, there will be people from the netherworld and also from the heaven's realm... Everybody will show up and keep themselves informed. They will exchange their materials for other's..."

"I think we can get these things there. It is nearly impossible for people in the Yang World, but for people from netherworld and heaven's realm, it may not be that hard."

Ye Xiao said, "That's it. Two plans, both are not easy."

Zhao Pingtian took a long breath out and spoke with a sad face, "Today I have learned that the universe is so abroad. I have always thought that I was strong enough to ignore everything and every man, but it turns out I am nothing but a complete joke. There truly is heavens beyond another..."

"Rou-Er, when will I be able to see you and be together with you..."

He sighed with a long breath.

The girl in the grey fog looked at him obsessively, as if she was weeping.

"With your current cultivation level, you're just one step away from the Qing-Yun Realm. When you get to Qing-Yun Realm, with your potential, I believe it will only take you three hundred years to reach Dao Origin Stage!"

Ye Xiao blandly spoke, "In Land of Han-Yang, it sounds impossible to reach it, but when you are in Qing-Yun Realm, you will understand it may not be that difficult to do. It just looks difficult. If you can survive in the martial world that is full of killings, living on, step by step, you will eventually make it! I believe with your determination, it won't be too long!"

Zhao Pingtian was spirited. He took a deep breath in and said word by word, "If only things will go as you say. No matter how hard it is, I will do it for my Rou-Er!"

Ye Xiao seriously said, "But there may be some uncertainty, or should I say guarantee..."

"What uncertainty? What guarantee?" Zhao Pingtian asked.

"First, you accidentally make Rou-Er's body and Yin Fruit merge together, but it will only last for a hundred years. It is better than the Yang Fruit though. After a hundred years, if she still hasn't reincarnated, she will vanish because the Yin Fruit will be used up..."

When he said so, Zhao Pingtian and Rou-Er were both stunned. Ye Xiao bitterly smiled, "I haven't finished yet, please don't panic. I said there is uncertainty. It is not a bad news. I just want to tell you that I have a way to make the Yin Fruit last forever. Every once in a while, I will make some Soul Protection Dan beads. That will make sure Rou-Er stays."

"In the first hundred years, one dan bead will bring her ten years. It won't last forever though. As time passes, the efficacy will be reduced. About a hundred years later, she will have to take two dan beads at a time for ten years. Two hundred years later, she will need three..."

Ye Xiao said, "It is not such a big problem though. Quantity can save quality anyway. We will just need to make more dan beads and collect more materials. It won't be a problem for Ling-Bao Hall!"

Zhao Pingtian's face changed and changed again. After a while, he said, "I really appreciate your kindness, Feng Monarch. I am a happy man no matter how many difficulties I will encounter, no matter how many dangers stand before me, if I can see Rou-Er for even just one time. I don't care if I need to spend three hundred years, even five hundred years, a century..."

Ye Xiao smiled. "Brother Zhao, you are making the standard a bit too low though. It is more than this... Much more..."

Zhao Pingtian was shocked. He said, "What do you mean? Did I mistake something?!"

Ye Xiao shook his head and said, "I mean Brother Zhao you are asking for little. Don't you remember what I said? I said if any of the two plans works, you and Rou-Er can be together forever! If you just want to see her for once, we don't need neither of these plans!"

Zhao Pingtian was shocked. He spoke with a shaking voice, "Feng Monarch, do you have other method that can bring Rou-Er to my sight?"

Ye Xiao nodded and said with a smile, "It is not so difficult to just let you see her as long as we do the right thing in the right time and the right place. Every 15th July in lunar calendar, the Yang World has most yin qi in the year. We just need to find a place where there is an enormous amount of yin qi and Rou-Er takes a Soul Restraint Dan bead in advance. Rou-Er will be able to show up in this world for two hours!"

"Then you can see the one you love the most... There is something we need to be careful about though. You have to remember that you cannot get too close to her. She is still a spirit. You are a man with strong yang qi. If your yang qi clashes with the yin qi, it will make other spirits form into a tide of spirits. They

will very possibly whirl Rou-Er away with them to the netherworld... That will be a disaster!"

"Really? So I can see Rou-Er on 15th July?" Zhao Pingtian couldn't believe it. He kept asking!

"More than once. You can use this method every year. In other words, you and Rou-Er can meet once every year for two hours!" Ye Xiao spoke with a smile.

"Every year? Two hours? Are you serious?" Zhao Pingtian was breathless. His pupils dilated three times because of excitement. He was apparently stimulated by Ye Xiao's shocking news.

"So I can see her before I reach Dao Origin Stage? I... I..." Zhao Pingtian's face turned red. He didn't know where to put his hands and feet now. The surprise truly made him lose his mind.

In the grey fog, Rou-Er was looking at Ye Xiao with excitement too.

Rou-Er was now a soul. She knew much more about the netherworld than Ye Xiao. She knew that Ye Xiao was being honest. It was a practical way he said. She was even happier than Zhao Pingtian, as she knew she would be able to talk to her beloved once again.

...

Chapter 428: [What Does Laugh Mean?](#)

"Of course it's real..." Ye Xiao smiled. "Right. Today is 8th July. Seven days later, it is 15th... I will make a Soul Restraint Dan bead by then, so that you can meet each other for the first time and open to each other your true hearts."

First it was disappointment, and then it was despair, at last, it became a hopeful surprise. It filled up Zhao Pingtian's heart. He quietly stood there while looking at Ye Xiao. He couldn't believe this was real. He felt like he was going to explode the next moment.

He sat there with surprise in his eyes. Tears came out. The tough man, the killer king, acted like a child all of a sudden and started to sob.

After a while, he actually lied down on the table and cried out loud.

For how many years, his longing, his love, his regret, his waiting...

Finally, he had hope now!

He was like a traveller who was heavily loaded. He had been carrying heavy burden in his heart and could never put it down. No matter how tired and hurt he was, he never put it down. He just carried it and went on and on.

He had nothing to live for but still lived without love just because of the tiny hope that was brought by the moment when the Yin Fruit was absorbed by the body.

He had been struggling in desperation.

He cried so loud, like his organs were going to break down. While he was crying, he murmured, "I was thinking that after I avenge my sect, I will follow Rou-Er to death because I have nothing to live for. The way to the netherworld is a long distance. How can I let her walk alone. However, time to time, when I dreamt about Rou-Er, she always told me that she was always with me..."

"Fifteen years ago, I met a fortuneteller. He said that we are living in different worlds. We shouldn't have the chance to see each other again, but if we have faith, we may be able to... I know he was lying to me, but I have been living for this tiny hope, struggling in life... I... I... When I wanted to end my life, I thought about the fortuneteller's words... I hoped that he wasn't lying to me... Wooo... Today, I finally meet the chance... It turns out faith does give me hope!"

- Splat... -

His tears flowed down like a river hitting on the ground, making a pool of water.

A man should never cry, except when he is really sad!

Nobody would believe that the killer king would cry like this, like a kid that was wronged...

Ye Xiao truly understood Zhao Pingtian's feeling.

Zhao Pingtian saw his beloved one's dead body with his own eyes. He saw the grave with his own eyes. However, somebody told him that he would have a chance to meet her again! That was an unbelievable thing, wasn't it?

Zhao Pingtian did believe it.

He even kept the faith on it, on this nearly impossible dream, and lived till this moment with desperation.

Zhao Pingtian was a killer king. He was a firm and persistent man. That fortuneteller actually could convince him at that moment. Even though Zhao Pingtian wanted to believe him in the first place, but that fortuneteller must be someone extraordinary.

"Brother Zhao, the fortuneteller. Do you remember who he is? He is so amazing. I don't think he is not an ordinary figure!" Ye Xiao was curious.

"I don't know him. Since that day, we have never met again." Zhao Pingtian was confused.

Ye Xiao was surprised.

Ye Xiao thought that it should be a famous fortuneteller. Maybe he was someone like No. 1 fortuneteller in the world, with titles like 'Iron Words' or 'Inerrant Prediction', that someone who had shocked the entire Land of Han-Yang so everybody believed in him. Otherwise, how could he make Zhao Pingtian give up on killing himself. Unexpectedly, Zhao Pingtian didn't even know that guy. How could he know anything about his background then?

"He just told me people called him Mister Destiny. He told me that if I have faith, I will meet her again. I have never seen him after. I once tried to look for him everywhere, but I got nothing... He seemed to have disappeared since then... completely..." Zhao Pingtian said with confusion, "I don't know why. He said so, and I just believed him. I told myself once that he was a liar, but deep inside my heart, I knew he wasn't! Maybe I really wanted to believe what he said, but it is mostly about my instinct. My instinct told me he was telling the truth!"

"It is so strange. My instinct, well, my heart told me that if I have faith, there will be that day," He added.

Ye Xiao was curious. [How could it be so strange? Is there really an inerrant prediction in the world?

Mister Destiny?

I have never heard that name in the Land of Han-Yang so far. If

there truly is such a capable fortuneteller, he should be very famous in the world...

Who is this man? Where is he from?

How did he know there would be such a day?!

"What... What did he exactly tell you?" Ye Xiao asked.

"I didn't quite understand what he said back then. Now... I still feel that what he said is strange, but I believe in him deep inside me."

Zhao Pingtian said, "Mister Destiny told me this. Recent years in martial world, bones of the dead are everywhere; a clear conscience in your heart, a smiling monarch it leads you to; struggle for two lives, brightness in one life; one laugh at present life, the other at the road he comes; one laugh at the time, the other at the ancient; a couple will meet again, if only they have a laugh..."

Zhao Pingtian said while recalling what the man said. From every detail he remembered, he knew that he must be some outstanding figure who wouldn't show up easily. He had successfully predicted what would happen at the present time. It must be a great fortune for Zhao Pingtian to meet that man in the pass. Zhao Pingtian was thinking maybe he missed something that could change his future, yet he didn't realize Ye Xiao's face had changed.

"The first four phrases, 'Mister Destiny told me this. Recent years in martial world, bones of the dead everywhere; a clear conscience in your heart, a smiling monarch it leads you to', I think it is talking about me, how I live in the martial world, killing people. Although I do not know what the 'smiling monarch it leads you to' means, I surely have clear conscience. For all these years, I am an assassin with principles. I never killed any innocent people. I am with clear conscience, and I am sure about it! Maybe that is the reason why I got to meet you, Feng Monarch, and you bring me hope. The 'struggle for two lives' must be talking about me and Rou-Er. Basically, we are both living a second life now... The next, 'one laugh at present life, the other at the road he comes', that is hard to explain. 'A couple will meet again, if only they have a laugh.' I have no idea what it is talking about... I just know that me and Rou-Er, we must be related to the word 'laugh' a lot. However, this laugh... What does it mean? Is it a person, an item, or something else? I truly don't have a clue."

...

The Xiao in Ye Xiao's name means laugh. Xiao Monarch could also be called the Laughing Monarch, like some of his techniques portray. One Laughter in Skyline, Laughing Eight Blast, and more in the future. Basically, the prediction points that Zhao Pingtian will be lead to the Laughing (Xiao) Monarch.

Chapter 429: Solitary Life

Zhao Pingtian was thinking so hard that he frowned. "I truly do not understand the word laugh in it. I have been solitary all my life, living alone in this martial world. I have regrets and sadness all the time. I barely had a moment to laugh. I really do not have anything... related to this word."

Ye Xiao, sitting opposite to him, took up the liquor and acted like he was drinking. In fact, he was trying to cover the expression on his face. He was shocked!

[Laugh?]

Zhao Pingtian may not understand the meaning of those phrases, but Ye Xiao knew it immediately!

[Laugh... If it isn't referring to me, who is it?

A clear conscience in your heart, a smiling monarch it leads you to.

I am the Monarch.

[Xiao Monarch!](#)

Struggle for two lives, brightness in one life. This is ambiguous, but struggle for two lives must refer to me.

One laugh at present life, the other at the road he comes; one laugh at the time, the other at the ancient!

... That never refers to any others!

A couple will meet again if only they have a laugh. It probably says that only I can help them reunite.

I do want to help them on this!

I do want to, and I am able to!

It all fits!

It shockingly fits! It stuns me!

Who is this Mister Destiny? Where is he from?

He actually said these words to Zhao Pingtian dozens of years ago. That is so strange...

At that time, I was still Xiao Monarch, traveling the Qing-Yun Realm, laughing at all heroes in the world!

... What is going on?

What is this all about?

This is too much a fantasy!

Is there really somebody who can make such an accurate prediction!]

Suddenly, Ye Xiao was back to himself from astonishment. Instead, he felt cold on his back. He felt cold on his back immediately...

Zhao Pingtian frowned and confusedly said, "Nearly every phrase fits something that happened. Those that didn't happen will happen in the future, I assume. There is one thing that man didn't say though... He didn't say that I will meet you. There is a smiling monarch he told me, but it wasn't Feng Monarch. I would never make mistake on this. I remember!"

Ye Xiao coughed. He was speechless.

He truly didn't know what to respond.

[What can I say?

If I tell him the prediction is unbelievably accurate, I will have to tell him I am not Feng Zhiling, I am Ye Xiao, Xiao Monarch, the Laugh (Xiao) in the prediction!

Is it accurate? Unbelievably accurate? Horribly accurate?!

Can... Can I say that?]

After a while, he nodded. "It is impossible to foresee the future. Mister Destiny has already made a wonderful prediction. He has done a great job already. There should be some flaws in it, reasonably. The world is not perfect. How could prediction be perfect. There is no doubt that Mister Destiny's prediction is happening. He said 'a couple will meet again, if only they have a laugh'. There must be a reason for this. It will come true someday."

Zhao Pingtian agreed and he said, "I never doubt it. It is sure there will be that day."

Ye Xiao nodded. "Brother Zhao, what happened after that? As I know, the Yang Fruit contains extreme yang attribute. It benefits you by sixty years cultivation, but it also arouse the fire of irascibility in you. You should become easy to get furious. Gentle and soft man will become aggressive and angry. Nobody can control it... You have had such marvelous experience and then became killer king in the world step by step. Is it because..."

"Not really. I have suffered many mishaps in my life, but I am absolute true to others," Zhao Pingtian said. And then he sighed while looking up at the sky.

Ye Xiao could feel that there was too much sufferings in his sigh. It made him sigh too because of the sadness.

[Maybe he has always been true and honest to others, but how does he feel to himself?]

"That day, when I put the Yin Fruit on Rou-Er's body, I saw it merge into the body. I was so happy and I stayed close to the grave for half a month. Rou-Er didn't return to me. I am in despair so I left my hometown. I started to travel around. A few years later, I suddenly remembered that my master must know a lot about Yin Yang Fruits. There may be something about the Yin Fruit getting into Rou-Er's body. I returned to my sect to ask my master for help."

"When I was back, I was astonished. My sect... was destroyed... Over three hundred men all died... I... I felt like a thunder striking right on me. I was full of regret. If I didn't live that useless life for a few years, how could I not know it? If I knew it, I would absolutely return to my sect and fight beside my brothers and masters. I was out of my mind and I cared nothing in the world, and I didn't even know my sect was wiped out. The only reason that made me return to my sect was because I want my master's help on that Yin Fruit thing. I... I am such a selfish prick... I am such a loser who failed his own sect!"

Zhao Pingtian smiled with sorrow. "Those years, when I was sleeping at night, I dreamt about my master, elders, and brothers in my sect. They were so real. After that, I was determined to avenge my sect. I travelled around every place in the world to track our enemies. I realized something in those years. It takes money to seek revenge. I need money to find information about the enemy. I need money to feed myself. I need money for everything. I started to take some assignment for the bounty... That is how and why I enter the assassination field..."

"Fifteen years after that, I tracked down those men who wiped out my sect. I killed them one by one to avenge my sect. I brought their heads back my sect trying to comfort my brothers and masters!"

"When I just had brought the last man's head back to my sect, I finished the last thing I wanted to do. I started to think about another thing I wanted to do for a long time. Since I left Rou-Er's grave, it had been years. I never returned. I never did anything for my parents or her parents. I never was a good son to them. I am so selfish. I am a unfilial and a pathetic loser!"

"Maybe gods wanted to give me a chance to make it up. When I went back home, my parents and Rou-Er's were all alive. They were old but all living. I never got involved to the martial world affairs since then. I was a farmer in my hometown. I served the four elderlies until they died... I had nothing to concern in my hometown after that, so I sold everything and returned to the martial world. Deep inside my heart, I was always believing it that me and Rou-Er, we were not at the end yet..."

...

Xiao, 笑, means laugh.

Chapter 430: I Will Follow You from Now On!

"When I was back to be a martial artist, it surprised me that during the years staying at home serving the elderlies, my cultivation level didn't drop down at all. In fact, it was boosted... I became level 8 of Sky Origin Stage. There were not many things that could be more impressive for me after that. The only one that I can never forget is the hope Mister Destiny gave me... It lasts till now..."

"Recently, I am kind of short for money. It is hard to even feed myself. That's why I looked for a bounty hunt. I met the God Slayer Team, and they recruited me. Then I came to Kingdom of Chen, and then I met you, the person I am destined to meet..."

Zhao Pingtian bitterly smiled, "That should put a good summary to my life. Simple and boring!"

Ye Xiao was quiet.

[This killer king really has been through a miserable life. His fiancée whom he grew up with died because of disease. His sect was wiped out... He has lived without purpose for a long time, and became a killer king.

Wait, as the killer king, how could he...]

"Brother Zhao, with your title and capability, I don't think... you

would be short for money? You may not be wealthy, but you should have plenty of money. How come you end up short for money?" Ye Xiao asked.

As the killer king, Zhao Pingtian should have enough incomes to make him a rich man, not like Ning Biluo, who had many financial burdens. He himself spent all the money he got. How could he... be poor?

"Heh, heh. I never have more than one hundred taels with me. Isn't it unbelievable?" Zhao Pingtian showed a smile on his skinny face.

It was a extremely peaceful smile.

He barely smiled truly from his heart like this.

"It is self-disciplined to keep it less than a hundred taels. I gave away all the rest," Zhao Pingtian smiled and said, "as an assassin, I make money by taking others' life, also risking mine. No matter what, the money I earned is full of the smell of blood. Even though all the people I killed were bad guys, it was still murder. When I earn some money, I keep a part of it to feed myself and gave the rest away for the poor..."

He stopped and then smiled again. "Especially for those young couples who have no money to get married, I will give them more... I hope every pair of true lovers can have a happy ending..."

Zhao Pingtian gently looked into the air beside him.

Since he knew Rou-Er was with him, he kept looking to that direction gently although he could see nothing.

Rou-Er kept staying in that place although she knew Zhao Pingtian couldn't see her.

They seemed looking at each other from yin and yang, two different worlds.

Zhao Pingtian couldn't see her, but he felt like he did.

Ye Xiao took in a deep breath, saying nothing.

He didn't need to say anything. He understood Zhao Pingtian more than any others.

After all... That was why he decided to help Zhao Pingtian... Sometimes, he would think about someone whom he had failed in the past. She was also waiting in grief...

It was a love tragedy.

Ye Xiao didn't want another love tragedy to happen in front of him.

Deep in his heart, he felt like helping Zhao Pingtian was helping himself.

[Jun Yinglian...]

"I will help you, with all my heart. I will do whatever I can," Ye Xiao spoke in a low voice.

Both Zhao Pingtian and Rou-Er could feel that Feng Monarch was so determined on this when he said it.

They both felt grateful for it.

"Brother Zhao, let's work hard on this!" Ye Xiao looked at Zhao Pingtian. "No matter which plan we pick, you will have to reach the Dao Origin Stage anyway! Maybe higher!"

Zhao Pingtian showed sharpness and determination in his eyes and slowly nodded.

Ye Xiao didn't say everything, but Zhao Pingtian understood it.

[You are not capable enough if you don't reach Dao Origin Stage. Even though I truly want to help you, you don't deserve it. Because even allies, friends should be in the same league...

No tiger will ally to a rabbit. Rabbit is too weak. It is too weak that it cannot be an ally to a tiger. In fact, it is even not qualified to

be tiger's food!

Marriage requires a perfect match. So does friends!

Especially in this martial world, which is full of fights...]

...

"Feng Monarch, to be honest, what you give me is the biggest and brightest hope I have in my life. I don't know how to return you the favor now." Zhao Pingtian was solemn. "But I know you are in a dangerous situation. I won't say too much to show my thanks. It means nothing. For me, for Rou-Er, for the future, for the hope... From now on, I am a sword in your hand."

"For the days to come, let's get through the crisis together before we do anything else," Zhao Pingtian spoke seriously, "if we can't, I will die beside you. If we can... I will be counting on you for helping me and Rou-Er."

Ye Xiao didn't refuse him. If he did, it might hurt Zhao Pingtian.

In fact, Zhao Pingtian had to stay with him so that he could know how Rou-Er was. He needed Ye Xiao to make some dan beads to save her soul and many other things...

Ye Xiao did need some help at the moment. How would he refuse it then?

"Good!" Ye Xiao clapped. "Now, with the help of Brother Zhao, I have bigger chance to live through this."

...

Ye Xiao and Zhao Pingtian killed out a way back to Ling-Bao Hall.

They weren't far away from Ling-Bao Hall, so it shouldn't be a difficult thing for them to be silent and sneak back to Ling-Bao Hall.

However, Zhao Pingtian suggested that they killed all the way back!

He felt that he had endless power at the moment. He needed to let it out. He needed to especially release the wild joy and excitement, otherwise, he would be depressed.

Ye Xiao was speechless about it though.

However, as he thought deeper about it, it was a good thing that he had such a super guard with him. He could frighten those guys who were planning to attack him. So he just appeared as Feng Zhiling and swaggeringly went to Ling-Bao Hall.

It was like he had stirred up a hornets' nest on the way back and countless assassins kept showing up.

...

Chapter 431: Assassin Collection Addiction?

Zhao Pingtian was in an extremely raging condition. His current combat power was in a horrible level. Even if Boundless Saint was here, he wouldn't dare to fight him, but only step away to avoid it.

He was currently invincible in the Land of Han-Yang at the moment. However, if Ye Nantian or Bing Xinyue at their prime status, or Wan of Clouds and Xiu of Heavens were released from the restraint, he shouldn't be invincible!

They kept killing all the way back. Nobody was even near to stop them.

When they were hundreds meters away from Ling-Bao Hall, they encountered the last fight. It was the fiercest one too since Zhao Pingtian's sword broke apart.

The enemies in this fight were all powerful superior cultivators. Everyone of them had a divine weapon. Zhao Pingtian was strong indeed, but the sword he had was just ordinary. After several times of crashing, even though it was covered by spiritual energy, it broke.

The enemies were happy when they saw his weapon was broken. They thought they finally had a chance to win. At least, they thought it would be much easier to dodge his attack and even fight back and kill him instead. That was possible!

However, then the sword was broken, Zhao Pingtian shouted.

Facing countless swords that were getting close to him, he didn't step back. Instead, he marched forward. He turned into several shadows that looked like swaying swords. Within just a few seconds, over a dozen men died in his hands!

He shouted again with joy and cheerfulness.

"When hero's sword breaks, the couple in love will meet."

Mister Destiny had said these words to him.

Zhao Pingtian had kept it in mind and never forgot it. That was why he cherished his sword so much. As the killer king, why would he keep such an ordinary sword if it wasn't special for him. Just because this sword was mentioned in that prediction, he decided to keep it. When it broke, it should be the time to show whether the prediction was true or fake. He quite expected this day to come, but he was also a bit afraid of it!

At the moment, he finally got hope, and the sword actually did break apart in this day. That was exactly the prediction told him.

Whether was just a coincidence or not, the future was turning brighter and brighter for him!

He was thrilled and excited!

Finally, they were back to Ling-Bao Hall.

In the main hall.

Ning Biluo and Liu Changjun looked at each other when they saw them.

Zhao Pingtian was excited and surprised too.

The three of them had the same thought. [Is Feng Monarch addicted to collecting assassins?]

Zhao Pingtian thought. [I am surprised that they are here too! Are there too many famous assassins in this room now? Two of the top assassins in the world are here now! Liu Changjun is fine, but the other one, Ning Biluo is the King of Assassins!]

He would never underestimate his own capabilities, but no matter what, he would never think that he was beyond the King of Assassins, Ning Biluo, even though he himself was the killer king!

On the other side, Ning Biluo and Liu Changjun were even more excited. [Feng Monarch was just hanging out for some time... He... actually brought back another assassin? It is killer king, Zhao Pingtian... Unbelievable...]

That is even more dramatic than a novel!]

They both felt a bit... like drunk...

What happened next would make them feel more drunk than this moment. They had to be drunk to get used to it!

It was fine that the killer king came after him. Things happen unexpectedly. However, the killer king... he was so respectful to Feng Monarch?!

[They should have just met each other, shouldn't they?]

Zhao Pingtian was an unruly man. He was not so submissive to the world; No. 1 assassin, even though he was in higher position on the ranking list. How would he be so respectful to Feng Zhiling, who was much weaker than him in cultivation...

Ning Biluo and Liu Changjun just couldn't understand it. How could they not want to be drunk?

Especially Liu Changjun. He was emotional. [I have two idols in my life! One is the King of Assassins, Ning Biluo, while the other is the killer king, Zhao Pingtian!

Now that they are both in front of me and may both be my workmates...

Isn't it too much a happy thing?

It is such a happy thing!]

Hmm. Ye Xiao was half an idol to Liu Changjun though. However, Ye Xiao's thoughts were too unexpected. Everything he did was beyond Liu Changjun's knowledge. He did things that Liu Changjun couldn't understand all the time. That made him only half an idol to him!

Ye Xiao had a short meeting with the three assassins.

"Now you three are out top force in Ling-Bao Hall," Ye Xiao solemnly spoke, "but to deal with the current situation, this is not enough."

"Ning and Zhao Pingtian can defeat any individual enemy, but if they ally each other to attack us with advantage in numbers, you may fail. Everyone has limitation. There is nothing we can do."

The three of them nodded.

They all knew it well, so they didn't feel pissed at all.

"So, we need to enhance our power in a further step to deal with the current situation and also the future." When he said it, he was hesitating. He paused several times and he spoke slowly.

The three of them didn't know that he just made a decision. It was a decision that most people wouldn't make.

"We surely want to enhance our capabilities too..." The three of them looked helpless.

It wasn't an easy thing to do though.

First, they needed to be talented. Second, they needed special martial arts. Third they needed special dan and materials. Fourth, they needed opportunities... They needed all of it to enhance their capabilities. It wasn't something that could be done just in a few days.

They were all talented for sure; after all, they had reached such positions in the martial world. However, they were all in a difficult time to improve their martial arts.

It took ages for them to make a breakthrough.

Especially Ning Biluo and Zhao Pingtian. They were both in the edge of the limitation of this world. It was so hard to improve any more for them!

How to improve further when they were already in the top?

They looked at Ye Xiao like looking at a fool. [He talked like it is easy as chopping vegetables. Look how casual he is. What he is saying is like a fool making dreams, a frog looking up at the sky in the bottom of a well...]

Ye Xiao thought for a while and then took out three books. He

put them in his hand and measured the weight. He was silent for a while, saying nothing, just glancing at the three assassins on the faces.

Finally, he held the books and asked, "Ning, what is your life goal? Have you ever thought that to what level your cultivation of martial arts will go? What do you know about the worldly limitation of martial art in Land of Han-Yang?"

...

Chapter 432: No!

Ning Biluo would never know Ye Xiao would ask him such a question. He was a bit confused and said, "To what level... Well... I never thought of it. I just want to end the debts. When it is done... I may try to go to the higher realm just to see how it is. My life is short, while the future will never end... To what level I will reach, I guess it depends on how hard I work and what opportunity I can get... I don't think I can force it to happen."

Ye Xiao thought for a while and nodded. He said, "That's right. Well said. Life is short while the future will never end. Good talk."

And then he asked Zhao Pingtian the same question. Zhao Pingtian didn't hesitate. He said, "I want to reach the top level of Dao Origin Stage within three hundred, no, two hundred years. No, it should better be in one hundred years! I didn't think of things after that yet. I will focus on making my life goal come true first. Only when I hit the goal can I think about something further!"

Ye Xiao nodded again.

Ning Biluo and Liu Changjun looked at each other. They were both confused. [What does he want that he can only get it when he reaches the top of Dao Origin Stage? Besides, Dao Origin Stage... What is it? Is it one stage higher than Sky Origin Stage? Isn't it Spirit Origin Stage? Is it another name of Sky Origin Stage?]

Ye Xiao asked Liu Changjun the question. Liu Changjun seemed a

bit embarrassed. His two idols both gave their answers. Liu Changjun thought that they both had such great ambitions, and he felt that his own small plan was like nothing. It probably would make him look disgraced...

However, his two idols were watching him, and it was a question from his half idol. Liu Changjun had to be honest, "I don't have any big plans though. I just want to follow you, master, no matter where you go... I want to be a sword in your hand no matter where! Even if I have to hide in shadows all the time..."

When he said it, both Ning Biluo and Zhao Pingtian thought that his plan was too... unreflecting. He was still young, yet he had lost ambition. That was...

Ye Xiao's lips twitched.

Only he knew that among the three, Liu Changjun had the highest goal, whether he said it on purpose or not!

[I was on my own in the previous life. Even so, I reached the top of Dao Origin Stage. In this life, I will definitely break through Dao Origin Stage and reach higher levels. I am going to be king and look down upon the entire world, laughing at all men in the universe!]

If Liu Changjun really can stay with me all along, he will definitely break through Dao Origin Stage too. It should be a sure thing that will happen in the future.]

Ye Xiao's eyes shined. He said, "I have three books of three different martial arts. One is Sun Burns in Heaven. There are three sections in it, fist, sword and footwork."

He blandly spoke, "I got it in order. Follow this book and you can reach..." He looked up at Zhao Pingtian. "You can break through two more stages higher than Sky Origin Stage."

The three of them first all felt confused, but then they were all enlightened.

They were confused because they couldn't believe there was any martial art that could make a cultivator break through two stages.

[All mighty book of martial art! Invincible martial art! Oh my god!]

And then they felt enlightened because they figured that it should be a pure yang martial art because of its name, Sun Burns in Heavens.

A pure yang martial art suits Zhao Pingtian much more than the other two.

Zhao Pingtian stepped forward without hesitation and said, "It is an honor and a great opportunity for me. Thank you, Monarch!"

His face turned red because of excitement. He tried so hard to suppress the excitement in his heart to calm down.

Two stages higher!

That meant it would help him break through at least eighteen levels.

He could at least reach Dream Origin Stage!

He could even go higher!

He had always wanted to break through Sky Origin Stage, but he just didn't know how. At the moment, he was like an extremely poor man who suddenly saw a mountain of gold, or a map to a great treasure.

At least, he was much closer to his goal with this martial art now!

He took over the Sun Burns in Heavens and turned over the first page. He just read it and was attracted immediately. He was immersed in it like nothing else mattered anymore around him.

Ning Biluo and Liu Changjun looked at him and both felt jealous.

A book of martial art that could make people immersed just by one look, it was truly a great martial art. First, it must be some special martial art that was difficult to get. Second, the one who read it must fit the attributes of the martial art. Third, the most important one, it was a martial art that led to two stages higher

than the limitation of this world. It was beyond people's imagination really...

It was simply a story that would only happen to the protagonist of a novel.

Zhao Pingtian got such martial art that suited him perfectly. He was like becoming a god with just one step ahead. What a lucky man!

What else could be better than this?

Ye Xiao watched them both. He wanted to laugh. He took out a second one and said, "This one doesn't have a strong attribute. It should be an in-between martial art. I think it suits you the most, Old Ning. Here."

Ning Biluo didn't take it over immediately. He firstly looked at the cover of that book. The title on the book flamed in his heart like fire right away.

Heaven Formula of Prime!

It was also a martial art that nobody had ever heard. However, Ning Biluo knew that it must be no weaker than the one Zhao Pingtian had gotten.

[This must be the opportunity that will build up all my achievements in the future.

But if I take it, I will never be able to return the favor to him.]

He was hesitating. He was struggling. Even though he always showed a calm face, now he couldn't help showing anguish on his face.

Ye Xiao smiled and said, "Ning, have I ever forced you to do anything?"

Ning Biluo was surprised. He said, "No."

"Right. No, I haven't, and I won't force you in the future," Ye Xiao casually spoke, "Do you think it is possible that you can return me all the favors that I have done for you by now?"

Ning Biluo was stunned.

[He saved me twice and gave me all the materials and financial support that I needed. Can I pay it off in this life?]

The answer was no!

Ning Biluo spoke with bitterness, "No!"

...

Chapter 433: Fostering Superior Cultivator

Ye Xiao smiled and said, "I am actually giving you the chance to return the favor to me... If you are improved, you can do more things for me. That makes it faster to return whatever you owe me. Don't you think so? If you are more capable than this, when I am in danger like now, you will be able to do more than just die with me... Isn't it true? You are never gonna pay off your debt. Why don't you just owe me more to improve yourself, so that you can maybe help me more in the future? You said it yourself. 'Life is short while the future will never end'. As long as you can stay alive, there may be one day you can return all the favors you owe me!"

Ning Biluo was silent. He thought for a while and then spoke in a hoarse voice, "That's right."

He stepped forward and took over that book. Word by word, he said, "I hope that I can return the favor someday in my life."

Ye Xiao sighed and said, "Ning, you are being too sensitive about the past. I understand your feeling and your thoughts, but you don't know mine. If I want men to work for me, I can just spend lots of money and there will be lots of superior cultivators for me to pick. Even if there are some people who don't like money, can they also refuse the martial arts I offer? In fact, I never asked you for anything. I admire you. I see you as my friend. I never want to get anything from you. It is just that simple. It is always that simple."

"If you treat me as a friend of yours, you shouldn't have that

thought about who owe anything."

He casually spoke, "If you truly see me as your friend, even if I give you nothing, will you ask anything for return after you help me? It is the same case the other way around. That is all."

Ning Biluo lowered his head while breathing heavily. He smiled and said, self-mocking, "I am an assassin. I never have friends. I don't dare to have friends... I have her thought that there would be one day when I have a friend..."

Even though he said so, his eyes lit up.

[Friend.

What a warm word to hear.

I, Ning Biluo, also have a friend. Even though I am an assassin, there will be someone admiring me!]

"Friend!"

Ning Biluo murmured. He didn't refuse the martial art or contradict Ye Xiao's words.

The only thing he thought... was that no matter what happened in the future, he would never betray his friend!

When it came to Liu Changjun, it became much easier.

"Liu Changjun, this is the martial art I told you earlier."

"Whoo! Great! Finally! I love you so much baby! I cannot eat, cannot sleep because I kept thinking about you! Now you finally come to me!"

He took it over and started reading it. He didn't feel that he owed Ye Xiao anything at all. Everything was so smooth and natural.

If Boss Wan was here, his jaw would probably fall on the floor. He might think, [Oh my god. That dumb face, Liu Changjun, who barely talks, actually can be such a showman? You truly cannot judge a book by it's cover!]

In fact, for Liu Changjun, he was thinking, [I am going to spend the rest of my life following him anyway. I have to show him my true personality!

He gives me martial arts, I will cultivate it with full efforts. That is it.

I don't have to act like I am calm and cool. Isn't it tiring to do that?]

Ye Xiao thought with sigh. [Who says assassins are all horrible? These three assassins all have different personalities.

Zhao Pingtian was grateful. Ning Biluo was cool and insistent. Liu Changjun just cared about nothing.

They all have one thing in common though. They kept their words and they are duty-bound not to turn back!

...

The three of them were all immersed in the martial arts.

Ye Xiao quietly left Ling-Bao Hall for home.

Master Bai's appearance-blocking art was quite good, but it wouldn't last forever. Ye Xiao's East-rising Purple Qi was marvelous. If Ye Xiao was a bit stronger in cultivation, he would have removed the spell on him immediately. After all those fights, he finally was able to change his appearance, so he turned back into Ye Xiao. He went back home as Ye Xiao, so nothing happened. He was safe!

He was out for two days this time. Song Jue would possibly nag him when he was back. Ye Xiao felt a bit headache thinking of it.

When he got home, surprisingly, he didn't see Song Jue.

Song Jue was out, even though he had always been staying at home year after year. It was hard to know what he was out for.

Ye Xiao was surprised, so he asked someone. It turned out Song Jue had been out for two days now.

Nobody knew what he was out for.

What was so important that Song Jue had to leave for two days in such a time?

"Uncle Song is acting weird. He left no signs behind at all. He always stayed at home in ordinary days..." Ye Xiao shook the head. He couldn't think it through and didn't know where to find Song Jue.

So he decided to just wait till Song Jue was back.

When he was back to the yard in front of his room, he felt some fierce sword breaths in the air.

Bing-Er was practicing sword in the yard.

One after another strike of cold sword breath flowed everywhere. It was making sound like it was solid.

Ye Xiao was shocked when he saw it!

[How many days since the last time I saw her practicing?

How can she get improved so much?

Listening to the sound of her sword swaying in the air. She must have at least reached the Earth Origin Stage?

How come she is improved so fast?]

The last thing a cultivator wanted was to be interrupted when cultivating. Ye Xiao was an experienced cultivator. He knew it well. He just kept silent and quietly walked in.

In the yard, Bing-Er was holding a long sword that looked like it was made of snow. She was concentrated in practicing sword moves. Endless snow-white flowers flew in the air while falling down to the floor.

The yard was like filled with flying snow as the flowers were falling in the air. Endless cold qi was spreading along with it.

The sword glow was shining. Bing-Er's dress flew in the air, so did her hair. She looked like a fairy descending to the world, showing her body in perfect shape. Her face was tense, as she was so serious.

What was interesting was that while she moved, she couldn't help but zip her lips and plump up her cheeks, like it would make her strike more powerful.

Every time when Ye Xiao saw it, he would laugh at her, and she would throw a tantrum. However, she never changed it. She just got used to it.

At the moment, the solemn eyes, the serious moves, the cold and shiny sword, the flowers flying in the air... and the plumped pretty cheeks...

It made up a scene that would make everybody laugh, but Bing-Er herself didn't notice at all.

...

Chapter 434: Terrifying Progress

The sword Bing-Er was using wasn't ordinary. It was the sword Ye Xiao made earlier, the Ice Soul Sword.

It took a short time to make it; he was in a hurry after all. However, the material, the Ice Soul Essence, was among the best of the best. The sword was crystal and cold because of the special material, and it was also in a fashionable style.

It was not only in good shape but also in good quality!

Bing-Er loved it for the first sight. She acted coquettishly with tears in her eyes when begging for it from Ye Xiao. After that, she stayed with the sword all the time.

Sometimes, she would put it on her waist, like a swordswoman, waiting for Ye Xiao's compliment.

It came to the end of the section Bing-Er was practicing now. As she stopped and the sword lights disappeared, she was gasping. Sweat came out from her forehead as her face turned red because of the moves.

The next moment, she saw Ye Xiao at the door.

She shouted with joy and ran over to him immediately. She hugged Ye Xiao and rubbed his chest with her head, leaving the sweat on his clothes.

Ye Xiao tapped on her head. "Girl, why so diligent all of a sudden?"

"When was I not diligent? Humph..." Bing-Er pouted. She seemed annoyed. But then she spoke happily, "Master, I think I have progress. A big one..."

Ye Xiao blinked. He didn't think she was boasting though. She had made a huge progress during these days. It had been only two days since he last saw her, but she was already massively improved. He knew it when he looked at the way she used the sword. However, it needed time to judge how big the progress she made!

Ye Xiao tapped on her wrist to check her Mai. He put in a bit of spiritual qi to connect her Mai. After a while, he was astonished.

Inside the girl, the spiritual qi was raging like it was endless...

[What is it?]

Ye Xiao opened up his eyes wide, "Girl, you... that... What is it?" His eyes were twitching, like he was looking at a ghost. His throat was dry like burning and he said, "You have reached... level 5... of Earth Origin Stage?"

He had sensed that the sword breath was strange when he was outside the yard. He knew she must have reached Earth Origin

Stage. It was a rough guess though. He thought it was probably level 1 of Earth Origin Stage, no higher than level 2. It would be quite astonishing already, however, it turned out she was at level 5 of Earth Origin Stage!

[That is... so surprising.

Unbelievable!]

"Girl, did you eat anything special the last two days?" Ye Xiao looked at her, frowning.

He thought that maybe Bing-Er ate some special materials these two days by coincidence, so she was improved so much. If she got such progress all just by herself without help, it would be breaking the law of nature, which was unbelievable!

"What did I eat? Nothing special..." Bing-Er rolled up her eyes and tried to recall something. She said, "Rice, vegetables... Meat... Just a bit of meat, not much..."

"..." Ye Xiao was speechless.

[I asked what special did you eat, not what did you eat for meals! ... Hmm. Maybe I asked it a wrong way. Anyway, I will ask you again!] So he asked her again, and got to know that she didn't eat any special materials at all. He was confused. If she didn't eat anything special, how come she was improved so fast?

The truth was that she was improved that fast. There must be something wrong with it then!

A girl who barely knew anything, whose bones were all broken and had never cultivated any martial art before, suddenly became a level 5 Earth Origin Stage superior cultivator within three months?

That meant she had gone so far within a hundred days that normal cultivators would have to spend their whole lives to achieve!

No, it was within ninety days!

And she had also spent time to recover from injury!

[How... How is this possible?]

"Girl, how did you cultivate it? Something is wrong!" Ye Xiao asked.

"How? I didn't really cultivate it seriously..." Bing-Er blinked. Apparently, she didn't quite understand Ye Xiao's question. She said with confusion, "Don't you know about my living status? I just... clean the room, read books, water the flowers and sometimes sit in meditation... Occasionally. I play sword and rest when I feel tired... That is it. That's how I do it... Nothing special really!"

Ye Xiao took in a deep breath, and then took another. He gasped.

He really didn't know what to say now.

[Clean the room, read some books, water the flowers, and she actually... just sit in meditation sometimes, and she rests when she feels tired... and she play with the sword occasionally... Nothing special...

That's right nothing special. It is three days fishing two days drying nets really... But she reached level 5 of Earth Origin Stage just by cultivating like that.]

"I have nothing more to say then..." Ye Xiao spoke tiredly.

Now he knew that the universe was so broad that strange things happened everywhere. Xiao Monarch was simply a frog in the bottom of a well!

"Master..." Bing-Er was a bit disturbed. She bit on her lips, lowered her head, like she had done something wrong. "You asked me how did I cultivate. Am I too lazy, so I got slow progress? Do I let you down? Then... I will work harder... I promise I will work harder. I won't be lazy anymore. I will practice sword, sit in meditation, cultivate as much as I can..."

Ye Xiao's face looked like a red tomato. He was speechless.

[Slow?

That is faster than any boosting ghost in the world!

And you said it is slow?]

Who else dared to say it was slow, Ye Xiao would drown him with his spit!

[If this is slow, what is not slow then? It is fast enough to fight against the heavens!]

"No no no. You are very... not slow..." Ye Xiao spoke with difficulty, "Sure, it would be better if you work harder, but don't push yourself too hard. You are not that slow really."

When he said that, he could feel his face burning.

That what exactly speaking without conscience!

Bing-Er's eyes lit up. She nodded and looked so happy about it.

And then she realized she was in Ye Xiao's arms. She blushed and got away; she spoke with bashfulness, "You didn't have any food yet, right? I will go prepare something for you. I'll be back soon."

"No rush." Ye Xiao grabbed her over and looked at her face. He felt that she must have recovered to normal age in mentality. She was exactly the same age as she looked like.

Chapter 435: Ice Soul Essence

He asked her a few questions as a test, and Bing-Er answered them all smoothly. She wasn't confused, lost and hazy like she used to be anymore.

Ye Xiao finally felt relieved.

[She is finally cured.]

And then he felt more than just relieved. He was astonished. Bing-Er knew a lot about instrument, chess, calligraphy and painting. She must have had very high achievement in those aspects before she lost her memory. When she first played the stringed instrument in front of Ye Xiao, it was awful. After several times, it was getting better and better. At the end, she could play a entire melody.

[She has a great comprehension. That is something extraordinary.] Ye Xiao felt like he had picked something priceless.

He thought maybe he should give her a reward as she had improved so much within two days. After thinking for a while, he remembered he had collected a lot of Iron Essence a few days earlier...

"Bing-Er, give me that sword," Ye Xiao said, "let me do some modification for you."

Bing-Er didn't understand it. [A fully formed sword with such good appearance and quality. Why modify it again?]

But she gave him the sword anyway.

She didn't understand, but Ye Xiao knew exactly what he was doing.

The main material of the Ice Soul Sword was prime quality Ice Soul Essence. It was a special material, and it was hard and tough. However, it was not flexible. Even though it was prime quality Ice Soul Essence and it wouldn't melt, it was still a piece of ice!

Such sword with unique material that was not flexible enough must be modified further before it became perfect. Otherwise, if it crashed on some heavy weapons like a broad knife, long stick, giant axe, or iron hammer, it would be broken into pieces after several hits.

What was more rigid would be more easy to break. The Ice Soul Sword was only ice!

To modify such sword, it must be done by a master of smithing. In the Land of Han-Yang, there was no true master of smithing. Even Shen Lianzi, the dead famous blacksmith wasn't quite like one.

However, for Ye Xiao, this impossible job seemed not to be so difficult!

Ye Xiao held the sword in hands. There was some white powder in his hands. He rubbed the powder onto the sword, and the white powder was absorbed into the sword. The sword, which would never melt, actually looked like it was melting during the process...

No, not just looked like. It was melting. It melted into water and dropped onto the floor.

A bit of the Iron Essence was pushed into the sword.

Ye Xiao operated the East-rising Purple Qi right away. The space between his palms seemed usual, but the temperature was actually boosted—hot enough to melt any steels.

How could he melt the Ice Soul Essence if he didn't make it hot like that!

It wasn't just melting. Ye Xiao kept the temperature in a certain status to make the Ice Soul Essence stay between melting and freezing. If the temperature went up a bit, it would melt; when it dropped down a bit, the Iron Essence would be unable to get in the sword!

His hands kept the sword in such high temperature. Over his hands, the water vapor rolled in the air, looking splendid...

Ye Xiao's eyes were like eagles'. He was staring at the sword.

He modified every part of the sword seriously from top to bottom.

The material he used wasn't just ordinary Iron Essence. It was the essence of some iron that came from outer space.

It was not like the other outer space iron though because of the color. It was white. Even the essence of it was white. It wouldn't bond with other Iron Essence.

The piece of outer space iron was priced three hundred million. It used to be about the size of a man's head, but when it was abstracted, it became a small pile of white powder.

Ye Xiao hadn't seen any iron like this before. He was amazed by the color, but he didn't pay much attention to it. There were too many materials he got from that auction after all. When he saw the sword in Bing-Er's hand again, he suddenly remembered the white Iron Essence. If he put them together, they would create something miraculous.

After all while, he successfully poured all the Iron Essence into the Ice Soul Sword!

A great job was done!

He finally stopped, but he was still sweating. He raised the sword and looked at it carefully.

The long Ice Soul Sword was looked the same as before. The blade was still crystal white. Even the color didn't change...

However, when it was turned a bit, under the light, there seemed to be endless stars hidden inside it, shining!

The starglow shined on the blade, making it look like a splendid river of stars.

"So beautiful!" Bing-Er couldn't move her eyes off it.

She didn't know how powerful it could be, but it looked fantastic. It had the appearance a girl would love!

"Come on. Try it." Ye Xiao smiled and gave her the sword.

Bing-Er took the sword and felt the weight of it. She hurriedly strengthen her wrist so that she could hold it tight. It was hard to tell by looking, but it was four times heavier than before it was modified!

Nothing changed on the look, but it was thousands times improved in quality!

Bing-Er swayed it for a while. She played a sword move casually. - Poof! - She struck out a sword strike!

The next moment, both Ye Xiao and Bing-Er was stunned.

Ye Xiao made this new Ice Soul Sword and Bing-Er swayed it!
They were both stunned!

When she made the strike, what happened was like a shiny river of stars showed up in the air!

She had just swayed the sword in the air, but it looked like she had struck thousands of times within an instant!

One sword swayed out thousands!

This sword had the capability to create phantoms!

Ye Xiao was stunned but also pleased. [With this sword, no matter at what level Bing-Er is, she will be improved four times!

As she gets higher and higher in cultivation levels, the sword will be more and more powerful for her. It won't come to a time when it doesn't suit her anymore as she develops into higher levels. That means this sword can be her Life Bond Sword!]

...

Chapter 436: Life Bond Sword

Ye Xiao touched his chin and thought, [If Bing-Er reached Dao Origin Stage someday, she won't need to really improve herself to the top of that stage. She will only need to reach level 8 and she will be invincible in the Qing-Yun Realm...]

"With this sword, I can finally be relieved." Ye Xiao took a breath out of relief. He didn't know why, but he felt like he had solved something really important, even though he didn't know what it was.

"Bing-Er, what do you think we call this sword... Star Ice Soul Sword?" Ye Xiao asked.

Bing-Er nodded with satisfaction. Apparently, she liked the name Ye Xiao gave it.

She looked at the sword with joy, with a big smile plastered on her face. Suddenly, she jumped up and kissed on Ye Xiao's cheek.

"Thank you. From now on, my sword is the Star Ice Soul Sword! I will be with it forever!"

Bing-Er liked it so much that she didn't even want to put it down for a second.

Ye Xiao was speechless. [What... Be with it forever... What do you think of it... Your someone special?]

...

The afternoon of the same day.

Bing-Er practiced sword in the yard again. As she played with it more, she liked it more. She couldn't even think about putting it down!

Ye Xiao was finally free, so he took a nap in the room.

He was truly exhausted after all that happened these days.

Dealing with Master Bai, fighting against the God Slayer Team, getting along with Zhao Pingtian, none of them was easy. He needed to sleep tight and well and rest his body and mind at the same time. For the days to come, he might not be able to rest well anymore.

Ye Xiao, who was asleep, and Bing-Er, who was practicing sword in the yard, they both didn't know just how powerful this sword could truly be...

Ye Xiao didn't really know that special outer space iron. He didn't know what exactly it was and what it meant... He didn't know that this sword he made for Bing-Er would lead to what sanguinary disturbance in the future...

He made a sword for the girl just on the spur of the moment. That was all!

However, this sword meant that a devil who was already close to invincible got a unique and invincible weapon. She and the sword together, it made her power increased... ten times at least!

The legend of this devil began at the spur of the moment!

...

Bing-Er spiritedly played the sword.. While she was practicing, she found something extremely special with that sword. It looked light, but in fact, it was over fifteen kilogram. It was heavier than most of the heavy weapons people knew. If she didn't use spiritual qi to perform it, even if she were a strong man, she wouldn't be able to lift it. Even if she could lift it, she couldn't sway it as she wanted.

However, when she injected her spiritual qi into the sword, it would become light like nothing. She swayed it so easily. It followed her mind and moved smoothly. While she held it, it would emit some gold qi to her hand from time to time.

It kept her calm and spirited.

More surprisingly... This sword could actually return qi back to her. She had been practicing for a long while, so usually, she should already be exhausted, but she felt nothing today. Even

though she had poured the spiritual qi into the sword and made it light like nothing, it still needed her energy to move. She should be exhausted anyway. However, she wasn't. She didn't feel a bit tired at all.

She checked on it and found that it had a special function. When her spiritual qi was used up, it would return some spiritual qi back to her and keep her going, even boosting the reload of her spiritual qi!

Bing-Er wasn't experienced, and she was usually confused, but even she knew that a sword that could return spiritual qi must be a legendary sword!

She grabbed the sword and stopped moving it. She looked a bit confused, like she remembered something, but couldn't be sure about it.

However, she put the blade on her finger and cut it...

Blood came out and dropped on the sword.

Over a dozen drops of blood all got into the sword like magic and integrated into it slowly. After the blood integrated, there was no trace of it at all. It was magical.

Bing-Er didn't know why she would do so, but she believed that she was doing the right thing...

She believed it was for her biggest interest!

Deep in her heart, that pulse calmed down after she did it.

"Why did I do it? It isn't truly hurting me to cut my finger a bit, but I still feel pain. Why was I so silly..." Bing-Er looked at the snow-white and clean sword, there was no blood on it. She murmured with confusion...

She didn't noticed that she didn't operate any spiritual qi. However, this over fifteen kilogram heavy sword seemed to be light as nothing in her hand.

To put it in another way, the sword seemed to be a part of her body!

Nothing could take it off!

...

With no reason, Ye Xiao slept deeply. He slept from the afternoon to the night. He seemed to have a dream.

In the dream, he had so many different strange feelings. He was suffering a lot in the dream. At the end of the dream, he saw Bing-Er looking at him obsessively like she was about to say something. However, she suddenly changed expression. She was Bing-Er but had a totally different personality. She was like a horrible devil. She raised the sword and stabbed into his chest hard...

The sword moved so fast that it was faster than light. Ye Xiao couldn't have time to get away from it...

As the sword light shined, it had gone through his heart!

"Ahh!" Ye Xiao shouted, woke up with fear, depressed in the shadow of death.

When he woke up, it was already dark outside.

"What are you shouting for? Bad dream?" Song Jue's voice came from outside the door, deep and sullen. "Why shout like you saw ghosts. It is late at night. You don't want to sleep, fine. Will you let others rest?"

"Uncle Song, you are back?" Ye Xiao was surprised that Song Jue was back.

Song Jue humphed with dissatisfaction. Apparently, he was annoyed by Ye Xiao's shout.

Ye Xiao put on some clothes and got out. He complained, "Uncle Song, where have you been? Why don't you tell anybody where you were going? You were out for such a long time. I am worried..."

"Nonsense. What should you be worried for? At my age, do you

think I would get lost? So you can just leave for days without any notice, but I can't? You have been missing for days too. It is just a few days. What do you worry for?"

Song Jue sounded fierce. He didn't seem to be kind at the moment. He stared at Ye Xiao, acting like a barrel of gunpowder which would explode at any time.

...

Chapter 437: Guest from the Sky

"Cough! Cough cough!" Ye Xiao lowered his head. [This old man is in a bad mood. I won't mess with him. I can't, but I can escape, can't I.]

"Something went wrong these two days. Somebody from the Ye Clan of Qing-Yun Realm came." Song Jue stared at Ye Xiao and said, "I sent them away though." His face was twisting, and his lips were twitching. And then, his eyelids shook.

"Are you hurt?" Ye Xiao asked in surprise.

How sharp his eyes were. Of course, he noticed something was wrong with Song Jue!

"Humph." Song Jue grimaced. "What wrong can it be. Nothing serious."

"Serious or not, you better let me check on you first." Ye Xiao didn't say more. He just pushed Song Jue onto the chair and started to take off his clothes.

When he lifted the clothes on his back, he saw over a dozen stripes of stick marks on it, swollen.

"It isn't serious wound. I got hit. That's all... Gosh." Song Jue looked troubled. "My somebody was here too..."

"Like this, not serious wound? Of course you got hit, by sticks... Hmmm? Your somebody? Somebody who? What are you talking about, Uncle Song? Do you even know what you are saying? You are confusing me." Ye Xiao asked.

"Humph!" Song Jue apparently didn't want to say more. He just humphed and then said nothing with a dark face.

However, his eyes lit up.

He seemed comforted, but reluctant and also confused.

Ye Xiao didn't dare to slow down. He took care of the wounds on Song Jue's back quickly. Suddenly, it reminded him that he could remove the hidden wounds inside Song Jue completely now as he had improved so much... [How about to getting it done tonight...]

[If I can't come back for some days in the future, or things go wrong and I have to flee from home...

I won't need to worry too much.

Song Jue without those hidden wounds can be strong enough to reach the limitation of the cultivation restraint in this world. He will be able to keep himself safe!

However, why does he look so upset today? Why?

People from Ye Clan came? Ye Clan of Qing-Yun Realm? Why did they come?

That stick wounds, and that 'my somebody', what does it mean?]

He asked Song Jue in different ways several times, but Song Jue wouldn't say a word. He would rather die.

Song Jue was eventually impatient and annoyed, he shouted, "Nothing good about your family, alright? Why do you have to keep asking! I don't even know how to tell your father. Can you just stop..."

Ye Xiao was more curious.

Song Jue wouldn't tell him anything. He just wouldn't. He just kept quiet.

He didn't say even a word after then.

Right before he fell asleep, he finally said, "Bastard!"

Nobody knew who he was cursing.

It wouldn't be Ye Xiao though. If it was Ye Xiao, he would say 'little bastard'!

Midnight.

Song Jue passed out because he was hit by someone again...

...

When Song Jue woke up, he found his spiritual qi was raging inside his body. He had a feeling he had never felt for many years. Now, it was back to him again like a miracle!

[Did I get another lucky adventure like last time?!]

He was half cured last time. It saved him from dying and it stopped his spiritual qi from leaking. This time, he was completely cured while unconscious. The wound that had been like ulcer in his bones was all gone.

Song Jue was so excited feeling the spiritual qi raging in his body but also confused.

[Who is this guy?

There actually is such a capable man in the Land of Han-Yang? So kind? Sneaked into our house just to cure me?

Without leaving his name?!]

Song Jue just couldn't understand why there would be such a good man in the world.

He wanted to wake up Ye Xiao and talk to him about it, but it was too late at night. Besides, there was a girl in Ye Xiao's room. Song Jue thought it was embarrassing to do so. He decided to ask Ye Xiao the next morning.

He heard there was looming noise of people shouting and fighting from distance. He jumped up to the roof and looked to the direction to Ling-Bao Hall. There was smoke rising and the fire lit up the sky.

"Ling-Bao Hall... eventually cannot escape it..." Song Jue stood there murmuring, "There is nothing to do under this circumstance..."

If possible, Song Jue really wouldn't let this organization collapse; it helped the military in the border war a great deal after all. However, he was just recovered. He needed more time to rest and regain the power. It wasn't a good time for him to start a strike. Moreover, he was just recovered to his prime condition. He was an ace card for House of Ye at the moment, so it was a waste to reveal his true power for somebody not relevant to him!

He hesitated, and then shook the head. He sighed and then went back to sleep.

If he didn't see, he wouldn't be annoyed!

...

At the same time, something that could shock the world happened on Master Bai's side in the bamboo forest!

"What?!" There sounded Master Bai's voice, furious and loud.

Wan-Er and Xiu-Er were both frightened and woke up from sleep in the room beside his.

They put on the clothes and went out the room. They saw Master Bai standing on the floor, staring at a person in front of him. He was raging!

There rarely was any stranger who came into the bamboo forest, yet now there was one standing there!

Stranger!

[Master... Master...]

They both stared at Master Bai. [Master is standing up?]

[Master stands?

What happened?

Is he cured?]

They started thinking the bright side!

However, good dream was broken. Master Bai sat on the chair and couldn't get up again.

The reason why he could stand up was that he was provoked. That was why he suddenly stood up!

However, after that, he was still a cripple.

What on earth made him rage like this? He had always been calm and steady.

They walked over and stood beside Master Bai, staring at the person in front of them with anger.

The man was tall with a pretty face. He was charming with long eyebrows reaching his hair on the temples. He was a pretty young man in this filthy world. His face kept giving them a feeling that no matter how serious he tried to be, he seemed wicked. His face seemed to be covered by wicked glow...

While Wan-Er and Xiu-Er were staring at him, he looked back to them and clicked his tongue. He said, "I think you heard me clearly. Oh, are these your birds? They are pretty. No wonder you... Oh right, did you lay on them yet? I mean, Bai, if you did, it would be human-animal this and that... I think you parents may

beat you up into a pile of meat... I am saying this for your sake.
Please accept my opinion."

Chapter 438: Ling Wuxie!

Master Bai said with anger, "Cut that crap and stop looking at them like that or I will cut your eyeballs out and rip your tongue! What do you think if I dare to do it or not?!"

"Oh my, oh, terrifying eyes. Sharp words. You scared me to death really!" That young man shrugged and showed a face like he was scared. "We are old friends after all. How can you do that to me? Where is justice about that? Besides, come get my eyeballs then, since you said you would cut them off me! Come on! I am standing right here, going nowhere. I promise I won't move away. I promise. Just wait for your move. If you think you can do it, come and do it!"

"Ling! Wu! Xie!" Master Bai called his name word by word. He gritted with his teeth, "You better explain what you said!"

"Hey, hey... I know you will panic!" Ling Wuxie shrugged and smiled in a wicked way. "I don't want to tell you. What are you going to do? Do you forget that you are a cripple. You can't get close to me. If you can, would you bite me? Bite me viciously?"

Master Bai humphed, "What are you doing here then if you don't want to tell me? Get off! As far as you can!"

"I said I won't tell you. Then I won't. I will never tell you... However, I will tell them." Ling Wuxie looked at Wan-Er and Xiu-Er wickedly. "I have a small problem. I can never stop talking to beautiful girls. And when I talk to a man, even if he is more

beautiful than girls, I will lose my interest. Oh, two beautiful ladies, let me tell you something..."

Wan-Er and Xiu-Er were both shocked.

[Master actually has a friend like this? This guy is... wicked...]

Ling Wuxie talked a lot. Nothing useful though.

"Say something that matters. Things about Meng Wuzhen!" Master Bai interrupted him.

"Urh. Alright," Ling Wuxie grinned and said, "your master's biggest opponent, Meng Wuzhen broke through Fairy Origin Stage and suddenly reached Saint Origin Stage... That means, haha, haha... Your master used to overwhelm him, but now he can only wait to be overwhelmed. What a shocking news..."

Wan-Er and Xiu-Er were astonished.

[Fairy Origin Stage, Saint Origin Stage! There was a God Origin Stage between them!

How could he suddenly improved two stages up?

It is no different than getting up the the sky by one step!

How did he do it?]

"How is that possible?" Master Bai angrily spoke.

"Ladies, let me tell you..." Ling Wuxie kept his wicked countenance and said, "It is said that... the stars in the firmament were in a chaos tens of thousands years ago... Not long ago, the stars suddenly turned normal..."

"Someday, Meng Wuzhen... accidentally got a precious treasure. After that, he improved so fast all of a sudden... It was like he could travel ten thousand miles in one day! That treasure, according to the information I got, is relevant to something about Heaven's Nature... That is why he improved so fast..."

"Something relevant to Heaven's Nature..." Wan-Er and Xiu-Er were shocked again. They looked at each other as their faces turned pale at once.

They all had a conjecture in mind, but they wouldn't want to believe it.

Master Bai looked darker and darker on his face.

"We are all well-informed people. We know that things like that always need lives and blood to sacrifice for. It has to bring chaos to the Yin and Yang, so as to..." Ling Wuxie grinned and sneered. He glanced at Master Bai and there was hatred in his eyes.

"Why are you looking at me like that?" Master Bai blandly spoke, "What does it have anything to do with me? I guess you must have been punched hard by Meng Wuzhen yourself, right?"

Ling Wuxie raged and shouted, "You prick! You asked me why I look at you like that? Don't you know why? You know why!"

Master Bai rolled up his eyes and didn't say a word.

"You think you can lie about what you did?" Ling Wuxie was furious. "We read that book together! You ruined that book, but I remember well all it says. Look at you, a cripple. You have been silent for such a long time. Don't you think I will know what you are doing here anyway? Do you think you are the cleverest man in the world?"

"I have kept your secret all my life because we are brothers! I hope that one day you will succeed. I hope that one day you will conquer the world. I may not be able to stand by your side, but I still feel happy about it. I feel happy for you. Do you know why? Do you understand it? Do you have feelings, asshole? Do you know what friends are? Do you know what brother means? You son of a b*tch. You bastard!"

There was sorrow and gratitude in Master Bai's eyes, but it lasted for just one second.

He lowered his head and didn't say a word.

"Don't treat me like a fool! Do you think I don't know who made that chaos in stars? Do you think I don't know who has taken endless lives and created bloodsheds? I know. Surely, others will get to know! Don't you think?"

Ling Wuxie was jumping and shouting. He was furious, "You want to do it. Fine! Why can't you just be careful? Can't you just get that thing yourself! Now, it is in somebody else's hand and you don't even know it! All these years, you are just piling up a stepping-stone for others! And he is your biggest opponent! Don't you feel ashamed? I feel ashamed for you!"

"Look at you, doing nothing, feeling good about your stupid Chaotic Storm sh*t..." Ling Wuxie spat and said, "Fxck!"

Master Bai looked calm.

"Meng Wuzhen is improved a great deal. He can't wait to set up his authority among our generation. The first one he want to knock down is you. You are not there. He couldn't find youm so he vented his anger onto the old man who is closest to you!"

"I don't have your schemes. I can't escape. I can't dodge. I can't defeat him. What can I do..."

Ling Wuxie wanted to cry but had no tears. "Do you think I would like to come down for you if I didn't get bullied that hard up there! Do you know that? Every three months, he will come start a fight against me..."

"A fight..." Master Bai's lips twitched, "A fight."

"Every time after that fight, I have to stay in bed because I cannot get up. Do you know how hard it is to survive his fists?" Ling Wuxie was angry. He spoke fiercely!

Master Bai quietly spoke, "Well then, maybe he didn't have the I want. If he has it, he wouldn't be so arrogant..."

Ling Wuxie laughed like a bird. "Quack quack quack quack..."

Master Bai was speechless.

...

Chapter 439: Sharp Warning!

"You don't think so? You think I am wrong, is that it? So what. Should I care?" Ling Wuxie humphed and walked out. "Fine. Be a king here in your small kingdom. I am going to surrender to Meng Wuzhen. I got beaten up because of you. I don't want to hear something like 'not really' from you."

He walked so fast. Only several steps, and he had already reached the gate. The next step is to walk out the door, or even out of the Land of Han-Yang already.

"Hold!"

Bai Chen took a deep breath in and said, "Maybe... Maybe... Maybe he has..."

Ling Wuxie sneered. "I really don't like it when you say something you don't mean... Truth is in front of us. You know he has it. You just have to play tough on your mouth. Thinking about one thing while saying another, and you even do another. I don't understand why a righteous man like me, Ling Wuxie, a great man, would end up being a friend to you, such a cunning prick. Why? Why? Gods! Earth! Tell me what is wrong with me. Tell me why I am still forever in faith to you..."

Master Bai was speechless again; he fiercely looked at Ling Wuxie.

[What the hell? What is that word? Cunning? How am I

cunning? I am just a bit smarter than you, wiser than you! Isn't it? Do I need you to be forever in faith to me? Even though you want to, I will not... Fine, I am in faith to you too, but can we not say it out that way!!!]

If staring can kill, Ling Wuxie should have been killed many times and ripped off into pieces already!

"Wuxie, sit down and calm down. Let's talk... Brother to brother..." Master Bai rubbed his forehead and said, "There are two problems here. One, I made a chaos and I suffered the divine punishment. I cannot recover to my prime. These two girls suffer it with me... They are restrained."

Ling Wuxie indifferently spoke, "Why talk so much rubbish. Who doesn't know? If you didn't end up like this, how could Meng Wuzhen get that precious thing? How could I be bullied that hard? Why would I have to come down and ask for your help? Fxck it. Every time after being beaten up, I swear I will punch you into death if I see you. But when I see you suffering like this, I just cannot do it!"

He then threw up his hands. "Look at you. I can do nothing to help! A divine punishment is doom. What can I do?"

"I do have a solution. We cannot change a divine punishment, but things will change. There is this guy. He can remove my curse..." Master Bai thought of a man's face. He sighed.

[Bloody hell. This time... it will be so embarrassing.]

I just set him up so bad, now I will have to beg for his help. I need him to say yes.

I am sure he would take the chance and haul me like he is in a position reaching the sky.

I have to ask, is this sh*tty mess all I made up myself, me, Bai Chen?]

"What? You have a solution. You said it right? ..." Ling Wuxie was angry and shouted, "Are you kidding me? Things will change? Fine, it seems to be a direction we can dig on... What use of this thing you tell me though? There is a solution, there is no problem!"

Master Bai frowned and rolled his eyes. He looked at him and said, "I am sure about that change but not fully. Things are not absolute, especially when it is the will of heavens..." He stopped and then continued, "The second problem is real difficult one. If Meng Wuzhen truly has that Heavenly Mystery, even if I go back in my prime, nothing can be changed. I know about my limits!"

Ling Wuxie clicked his tongue while pacing around Master Bai and talking in a weird voice, "Oh look, you said you know about your limits? Are you really Bai Chen? Oh, are you that Master Bai? The Third Lord Bai? Third Prince Bai? Hmm? How come I feel that you are fake? You must be a fake one. You are definitely not Bai Chen!"

Master Bai spoke weakly and sighed, "I mean... Ling Wuxie, it

will be so great... if you stop being so low like this."

Ling Wuxie turned furious. "I am low? I am low or you are? Hmm?"

He jumped from here to there shouting, but then he stopped and sighed. He said, "That's right. I am low! I know, you are right. I truly am! Bloody hell. I came along in a hurry, being upset for you like I am a pig. You are just fine. You don't panic. You don't do anything. I am low! I will go. Fxck it. I am going! I am so low!"

He turned around and moved fast, not stopping at all.

Master Bai knew that his old friend was angry for real this time. He moved to Ling Wuxie's side like a ghost, quietly. He grabbed his arm and bitterly smiled, "Come on. What a bad temper. I didn't say anything yet... Brother, don't struggle. Don't move too hard, my weak body is going to break apart... You can collide if you want to see me fall... I mean, even if I go back, what can I do to fight him? What do I have? Don't forget, Meng Wuzhen is a member of the four conqueror's clans in Human Realm Above Heavens. In his vein, there runs the blood from my mother's clan... We know we cannot defeat him. If we just go for it even if we know we will lose, isn't it just trying to suffer more? Everything needs a plan. If we cannot defeat him by force, we try wisdom. Don't do things we know that won't succeed."

Ling Wuxie gasped. He didn't struggle but instead spoke fiercely, "Are you really this afraid of that Heavenly Mystery?"

Master Bai didn't say anything. His face was dark. He showed the answer, apparently.

"Don't want to answer? Let me ask you another then." Ling Wuxie slowly spoke, "if there is no Heavenly Mystery, are you not Bai Chen anymore?"

Master Bai was moved!

It was a sharp warning resounding in his heart!

[That's right. Even though I don't have the Heavenly Mystery, it doesn't make me less myself! I, Bai Chen, who is stronger than me?

I am me with it, I am still me without it!]

He was enlightened. He felt something!

Suddenly, he felt relieved, like he had just dropped down the burden on his shoulders.

"Frankly speaking, you are afraid and not reconciled to it. You feel ashamed..." Ling Wuxue was still nagging, "Don't you deny it. You feel disgraced because after all that efforts you have done, what you are chasing for eventually went to another's hand. You don't feel good about it. You don't want to face it. He is blessed by the Heaven's Nature, that is true... But in fact, you are just escaping!"

...

Chapter 440: Commotion!

Ling Wuxie was cautious when he said those words. He thought Master Bai would definitely turn furious. He might not be able to fight, but he was more than capable to curse. Ling Wuxie was prepared to be shouted at. He thought it wouldn't go further than being bitten by Master Bai!

If he were Bai Chen, when he was taught a lesson like that, he would definitely jump up and bite!

However, Bai Chen was not like Ling Wuxie at all!

Before Ling Wuxie finished talking, Master Bai actually started to laugh. He looked so happy and said, "That's right. Well said. Wuxie, you are really my good brother who knows me well! I do have that problem in my heart. However, it is you who enlightened me. Now I understand!"

Ling Wuxie was shocked!

[Understand? What do you understand? How come I don't understand now?

Is this... Is this still the proud Master Bai?]

He looked at Master Bai dully and said with confusion, "You... What is wrong with you... You having a fever?"

He then reached his hand to Master Bai's forehead.

Apparently, he himself didn't really believe in what he had just said!

Master Bai grabbed his hand, stared at him and solemnly spoke, "Wuxie, thank you! Brother!"

Ling Wuxie was shocked!

He completely lost it!

After a while, he took back his hand and spoke in confusion, "I... I... What did I do... Why do you have to thank me... I... What is going on?"

Master Bai laughed and said, "You don't need to know. A wise man always feels hard to be enlightened, while a fool will sometimes gain from thoughts. Things are always so mysterious in the world. You only need to know that, you, Ling Wuxie is my brother, the best! That is all!"

Ling Wuxie rubbed his head as a smile of embarrassment showed up on his wicked face. He said, "Really? Am I really that good? Hahaha... Wait, what did you say? A wise man always feels hard to be enlightened, while a fool will sometimes gain from thoughts? Man, it's fine you call yourself a wise man, but why do you have to call me a fool? You think I don't get it? You are fool... You are all fools in your family..."

Xiu of Heavens and Wan of Clouds both felt goosebumps on their skins!

They were frightened. They thought only Ling Wuxie dared to call Bai Chen's entire family fools. There surely had never seen anybody who dared to say that!

Master Bai made up his mind and took it into action. He said, "Wan-Er, stop the plan here. Stop it all. Find Feng Zhiling as soon as possible. Tell him to start making those dan beads. Tell him, we will release the Heaven's Mystery to protect him from divine curse. We remove the biggest risk he needs to take in the process of making dan beads. Moreover, we will..."

His face was glowing, "We will go back to the Human Realms Above Heavens!"

"Yes!"

Wan of Clouds answered. She sound definitely happy.

Apparently, Wan-Er understood her master. She was positive about heading back home!

However, Xiu of Heaven's didn't look the same. She spoke in a heavy voice, "Master, this may be a little difficult... The strike against Ling-Bao Hall had started at tonight..."

She looked at the time and said, "It has been two hours since we gave the orders. Dawn is coming now... This moment... I can only hope that Feng Monarch will be lucky enough to survive..."

Master Bai, Wan of Clouds, Ling Wuxie's faces all changed!

Ling Wuxie knew the importance of Feng Zhiling. Even in the Humans Realm Above Heavens, there was rarely anybody who could make supreme dan beads, let alone Supreme Heaven Seizing Dan beads. Every force would do their best to keep a master dan-maker like this!

Bai Chen was in an opposite position to Feng Zhiling, and he knew Feng Zhiling well, so he knew it was impossible to recruit Feng Zhiling. To protect him was against his great plan in the Land of Han-Yang. He had tried to convince Feng Zhiling anyway!

Even though he knew this man's value, he had to get him killed!

At this moment, things had changed. His own future was depending on Feng Zhiling now! Things changed! It was hard to predict!

Ling Wuxie didn't hesitate. He stood up and rushed up to the sky. Looking in distance, he saw the fire and smother in the east...

"Let me go check on that!" Ling Wuxie disappeared in the sky, leaving his voice behind.

What he had done showed that he was strong like a god. Even in Qing-Yun Realm, there would be no one who could be as strong as him, let alone in Land of Han-Yang!

Anybody who knew it would probably be scared to death. [There is actually such a powerful man in the world?!]

It was quite reasonable though. He was a brother to Master Bai. How could he be weak in strength?

Wan-Er and Xiu-Er both jumped up to the sky and disappeared too.

Master Bai sat on the wheelchair. His pretty face was calm and casual. He didn't panic at all.

"I am Bai Chen!"

"Without the Heavenly Mystery, I am still Bai Chen!"

"Even if Feng Zhiling dies, and even if my Heaven Seizing Dan is gone, I will still be me!"

"I am Bai Chen. In this world, I am unique. I am me. I used to be, I am, and I will always be!"

His eyes lit up.

"Meng Wuzhen, I am coming!"

...

Ye Xiao had just taken care of Song Jue's wound. He then felt frightened all of a sudden, like there was a huge danger approaching.

He didn't dare to be careless. Quietly, he walked out the door. Looking at the sky, what he could see was nothing but peace. However, he was feeling more and more anxious.

He jumped up to the roof.

Looking around, he didn't find anything special.

He couldn't feel relieved, so he turned into the look of Feng Zhiling and went to Ling-Bao Hall.

On the way, he heard a sound of explosion. - Boom! - Fire and smother showed up from Ling-bao Hall. From a distance, he heard shouts and screams sounding in the air...

It was Ning Biluo!

It was just midnight.

This moment, the storm hidden under the table in the capital suddenly burst out in all aspects!

Nobody knew why.

Even those who were on a mission in this night didn't know what led to this chaos. Suddenly, a commotion started!

Ling-Bao Hall was the first place where the chaos happened. The gate was hit and broken by someone!

Fire rushed up to the sky with smother all of a sudden.

...

Chapter 441: King

Men in black showed up from everywhere with aura of killings. They crowded into Ling-Bao Hall with desire to murder!

They were all covering their face, leaving only their eyes and their swords glowing.

They entered Ling-Bao Hall, saying nothing. They just killed and rushed forward!

After just a while, Ling-Bao Hall was full of men in black. There were still many black-dressed men jumping inside and rushing out. From far away, countless men in black were getting closer like tide.

The aura of killing spread out the entire city from Ling-Bao Hall!

At first, the palaces of the three princes were lit on fire after Ling-Bao Hall. Shoutings with murdering sounds resounded. The Royal House was next.

Men in black crowded into the Royal House like tide.

Then the entire city was on fire. Smother came up from everywhere!

A chaos began in the capital of Kingdom of Chen all of a sudden!

...

The guardian force of Royal House had been prepared to defend any attacks. They didn't panic, they just followed orders to get into the fights.

Horns and drums were resounding everywhere. Sound of the iron horseshoe sounded like thunder from everywhere...

And there was sound of fighting and killing all around the city. It was in a mess.

...

Ling-Bao Hall.

When men in black rushed into Ling-Bao Hall, a voice coldly sounded, "Kill them all!"

It should be one of the men in black who said it.

Every head in Ling-Bao Hall had a price after all. A big price!

However, it was actually somebody of Ling-Bao Hall said it!

The man who said it was Boss Wan, whose body was so fat that

even god's weapons couldn't cut him through.

He was usually most afraid of death, but he actually showed some dignity at the moment!

"Good! I am putting my life on this then!" Boss Wan shouted, "Bastards, come on! Show yourselves! I have never thought about leaving this world alive since I came here three thousand years ago!"

While he was shouting, he actually rushed out with a fierce face. It was showing his attitude of 'killing one is good enough, but killing two will be better'.

He clearly knew it; the commotion was against Ling-Bao Hall. It had begun. As this place was the center of the chaos, and he was in a bounty just next to Feng Zhiling, it was close to impossible that he could survive...

Liu Changjun showed up like a whirlwind. He stood in front of Wan Zhenghao, shouting, "You bloody pig. Get the hell back inside the room! It is not your turn to shout yet!"

Wan Zhenghao was in great sorrow. "Back? Back to where? Brother [STD](#), relax. I have lived a life of thousands of years. I may not be able to defeat them in fighting, but I may be able to smash them to death with my weight..."

Liu Changjun rolled up the eyes and kicked on his belly. Wan

Zhenghao screamed and fell back into the room.

Liu Changjun actually used the rebounding power on Wan Zhenghao's belly to rush up to the sky. His long sword created thousands of star lights shooting down to the crowd.

He gritted with his teeth and said, "I hate it when people call me Brother STD... I have no STD at all... Wan Zhenghao you bloody pig!"

Wan Zhenghao's scream sounded from inside the room, "I hate it when people call me bloody pig. Don't you always call me that..."

Liu Changjun rolled his eyes and rushed into the crowd of assassins. His long sword moved like rainstorm, fast and sharp. He didn't answer that fat man anymore!

When he kicked on Wan Zhenghao, the rebounding force had pushed him up to the sky. In fact, it made his feel a bit numb on his leg too. [Damn it. Even a wall is not that tough!]

Seven hundred assassins showed up from shadows under Liu Changjun's lead. They stopped the men in black and started killing!

In the sky, there flashed a stream of blue light. A stream of sword light lit up the sky like a rainbow of lightnings. A slim figure showed up on the roof. He was cold and vicious; he cold spoke, "Ning Biluo is here. Who wants to kill me?"

The crowd of men was shocked!

For them, Ning Biluo was king!

He was king in the world of assassins, a legend. At this moment, this legendary figure showed up in their enemy's side!

That meant they were fighting against the legend in their world. They were actually fighting against the god of death!

Those men in black panicked. Some of them even stopped fighting.

They were confused.

Deep down in their hearts, they didn't want to fight against the King of Assassins.

The next moment, another shout sounded. A sense of loneliness and sorrow hit on them. Another black figure showed up, close to Ning Biluo, back to back. They both stood in the air, looking down at them proudly!

Back to back, they stood close to each other. They were both slim and indifferent, with enormous aura of killing!

"Zhao Pingtian is here. Who dares to fight me?!"

Both their words were like thunders striking!

King of Assassins and Killer King!

The two kings in the world of assassination were both here!

They both stood on Ling-Bao Hall's side!

[Two most powerful assassins to be their guards? How rich Ling-Bao Hall is?!]

Suddenly, all of them were like dreaming. They were surprised, shocked, astonished!

Far from them, there were lots of assassins approaching. They saw the two legendary figures and they were all shocked. All of them stopped moving!

[Holy sh*t! The two kings are there. We are definitely going to die there!]

Surely, there were some clever ones. They understood the two kings were on Ling-Bao Hall's side, but they also knew they couldn't change how things would go. Ling-Bao Hall was enemy to the entire world after all. Even Ning Biluo and Zhao Pingtian together couldn't change the situation!

The problem was, even though Ning Biluo and Zhao Pingtian couldn't change the result, they would definitely slaughter a lot at the beginning. They might not be able to kill everyone, but they would be able to kill a huge amount. The men in black were all here for the bounty, not for dying under the two kings' swords!

Clever or stupid, they all stood there. They didn't know what to do all of a sudden!

Two extremely powerful assassins showed up and held the situation completely!

King of Assassins!

Killer King!

...

STD, Sexually Transmitted Disease, in ancient China has a name of Hua Liu (花柳病/花柳), Liu Changjun's family 柳). It was a joke Wan Zhenghao made on Liu Changjun.

Chapter 442: War

Killer King and King of Assassins showed up together!

All the assassins were shocked.

If it kept going this way, the ones who started the attack would lose their confidence. Some of them would freak out and leave. That would lead to a retreat of the huge crowd. It was the best thing for Ling-Bao Hall for sure.

However, a vicious voice sounded, "Ning Biluo, very well.... The world No. 1 Assassin ends up to be a guard to somebody, a slave. You don't deserve the title anymore... Let me challenge you for this then. I feel humiliated about you getting this title for a long time!"

A black shadow like ghost showed up. It was a man in black dress, black mask, and big-sleeved robe. He showed up from a black mass of fog like he had no weight. He giggled and then waved his hands. A few silver lines turned into a big net shining in silver in the air.

Boundless Saint of Boundless Lake!

Behind him were several people.

Apparently, they were the top assassins of Boundless Lake. Top assassins and Boundless Saint together tried to defeat Ning Biluo!

Ning Biluo was calm. He just humphed and said, "You are dead!"

Sword light shined in his hand like a lightning lighting up the sky. It cut the silver lines in the sky as he rushed towards Boundless Saint rapidly like lightning!

Destroying the leader will make the gang will collapse!

Boundless Saint wickedly smiled. He didn't step back, instead he marched.

Just in seconds, he and Ning Biluo had fought several sounds, making splendid lights.

Boundless Saint was a bit weaker than Ning Biluo, but it was not easy for Ning Biluo to take him down in a short time!

...

On the other side!

Because Boundless Saint suddenly showed up with his top assassins to attack Ning Biluo, Ning Biluo left the main battle. No matter how arrogant Ning Biluo was, he wouldn't dare to say he could deal with those assassins at the same time when he was fighting Boundless Saint and his men. If he dared to so, he would die!

Ning Biluo was taken care of, but there was still Zhao Pingtian. The three strongest assassins in the world all showed up here now. Boundless Saint, the No. 2, and his men were fighting Ning Biluo, the No.1. Zhao Pingtian, the No. 3 was still standing there, looking at the crowd coldly. Even though Ning Biluo was gone, nobody still dared to move recklessly!

If Ning Biluo and Zhao Pingtian together had a ten thousand point in fighting capability, Zhao Pingtian alone should be over four thousand. The men in black, each of them was mostly just thirty points. One hundred points was their limitation. Four thousand points or ten thousand points, to them, were just the same, invincible!

When the situation was cooling down, a laugh sounded, "Zhao Pingtian? Killer King? What a big title. Come on. Let me knock you down to the dirt, Killer King!"

A blue sword light lit up, like water rolling in the sea. A big shadow suddenly came down from far away. He was also covered on the face, and his sword was glowing in cold lights. He just struck it toward Zhao Pingtian!

The sword swayed and it created a stream of light that was like a long piece of cloth. It struck down and the light tail didn't end!

Zhao Pingtian humphed. He didn't hesitate. He reached his hand to the sword and drew it out.

The sword in his hand was the one Ye Xiao gave him. It was a lie if somebody said that it was ten thousand times better than his old sword, but it was at least a hundred times better.

Ye Xiao had so many treasures. To give Zhao Pingtian, a cultivator in such a level, a sword, he would definitely pick a sword that was best of the best!

- Clang! -

They two sword crashed!

They both used sword. However, they were both using it like broadsword, striking it down in full power.

A sound of cracking loudly sounded. Everybody around them felt shocked in their ears. A buzz appeared in their heads as all of them suddenly became deaf for a moment.

Zhao Pingtian stepped back about ten meters. The big guy who suddenly showed up and attacked made a roll in the air while moving backward. He didn't get hurt at all.

After one round, he was still unharmed. There was barely anybody who could do so. Everyone was wondering who he was!

"Who are you?" Zhao Pingtian felt strange too. So he asked with cold eyes, "You must be someone with fame. Give me your name! Hiding behind the mask is not what a hero would do!"

That man said in a hoarse voice, "I am just an assassin. Assassin hangs around darkness. I am never a hero!"

And then he laughed. "Zhao Pingtian, where is your sword?"

He swayed his long sword again to attack. It was more aggressive this time. Apparently, he wanted a hard fight.

Zhao Pingtian was furious. The man was in the same level with Zhao Pingtian. He must be some famous figure in the martial world. However, he came to Zhao Pingtian with a mask on...

What worried Zhao Pingtian was that the moves of that man were specially designed to fight against him. That crash back then, if Zhao Pingtian was using his old sword, it would definitely be broken, even though he was a bit stronger in cultivation level. He might be shocked when the sword was broken, and he would get hit and died soon. That was not a joke!

Zhao Pingtian kept thinking. The man was here to specifically take his life, and he knew him so well. He just wanted to kill Zhao Pingtian. This man had to die!

"Fine. Go to hell then! All men have the same name when they die anyway." Zhao Pingtian's sword became a stream of light moving around his body. He continued with a cold voice, "Corpse!"

He stopped talking but focused on fighting that man. The fight

was drastic. They changed the battlefield while fighting, jumping up the roof then jumping up to the sky. They both held their breath and fought in sky!

They had the same thought of this, 'Who fall first will lose!'

Just in minutes, two great figures on Ling-Bao Hall's side were gone. They didn't have the time to shock the enemies further since they ended up getting restrained by others!

The two super powerful men were gone. Those men in black were back to their missions now. Many of the men in black had entered Ling-Bao Hall and started to kill!

Liu Changjun was like a ghost; he kept his mouth shut while rushing around the yard. The long sword in his hand was overwhelming. As it shined with silver lights, three men in black died with blood on their throats. Over a dozen men saw the sharpness of his sword, so they rushed over together mercilessly. Liu Changjun didn't want to face them in a tough way. He stepped backward and jumped through a window behind him and entered the corridor of the room. - Shoot shoot shoot! - Three sword moves, and three men in black died with blood on chests. Before the three of them fell down, Liu Changjun had jumped through the window again, out to the yard. Before he touched the floor, seven sword moves out.

Seven assassins, who attacked him had just reached the window, unluckily encountered the sword attacks of Liu Changjun. Seven men screamed loudly and their bodies flew out like a flying kite with cut off strings. Seven streams of blood shot to the sky,

turning into seven blood rainbow in the air under the blue lights of those Sky Origin Stage cultivators.

Sounds of killings burst out.

Liu Changjun's assassins group arrived and got involved to the fight quickly!

Men were fighting inside Ling-Bao Hall everywhere. However, there was something strange. No one said anything or made any noise except those who exclaimed before they died.

It was reasonable though. No matter on which side, they were all assassins!

Ling-Bao Hall's men were all assassins. Most of the men in black were assassins too!

Assassins were always quiet. Assassins never talked much.

Assassin against assassin, nobody talked. They just fought.

The stuff of Ling-Bao Hall had left this place under Wan Zhenghao's arrangement long ago. They were hidden in somewhere safe at the moment.

The city had been filled with bad news these days. Wan Zhenghao was afraid that this would happen beyond expectation,

so he told everyone who worked here to leave Ling-Bao Hall everyday when the night came. They only needed to return the next day.

No one was allowed to stay the night in Ling-Bao Hall.

The attack was surprising, and it was loud and fierce, but those who couldn't fight had left Ling-Bao Hall long ago. Most of them were ordinary people. The others were just cultivators in Human Origin Stage or Earth Origin Stage. In such fights, they were useless. If they stayed, they would die for nothing.

As long as they were gone, no assassins would go kill them in other places. Assassins had their principles. They wouldn't kill a man for free. Ordinary people who worked in Ling-Bao Hall were safe.

In the sky, somebody shouted. Ning Biluo's sword hit on Boundless Saint's!

- Boom! -

...

Chapter 443: Prestige of the King of Assassins

- Boom! - Boundless Saint stepped back, staggering. Ning Biluo staggered backward ten meters, eliminating the strike and dodging the attacks from the other six assassins of Boundless Lake. He then rolled over and became like a long rainbow with his sword, rushing over towards the Ling-Bao Hall!

It wasn't for nothing. His sword light was splendid. The sword light was like a light pillar with coldness, running over the house like wild wind. All those assassins who had stood on the wall or tried to get up on the wall were wiped!

Ning Biluo actually had time to do so while he was fighting against Boundless Saint!

What he did was surprising. It lasted for a short time, but it affected a big area.

It hit around the house!

Pressure on Liu Changjun's group was greatly reduced. It was temporarily reduced, but even one second was a pleasant rest. Ling-Bao Hall's side was thrilled. Many of them started to fight back during the seconds and killed many enemies.

Boundless Saint stepped back dozens of steps when fighting Ning Biluo. He finally stood firm. When he looked at Ning Biluo, Ning

Biluo was killing a bunch around the house. His face turned red because he was humiliated.

"You pushed it too far!"

While he and his men were attacking Ning Biluo, Ning Biluo actually had time to kill a lot others in another place. That meant he didn't put Boundless Saint in his eyes at all. Boundless Saint viciously spoke, "Good move, King of Assassins. However, you are underestimating me! I shall show you what regret tastes!"

Before he finished the talk, he rushed over to stop Ning Biluo.

In Boundless Saint's mind, Ning Biluo made such an area attack right after one sword hit against him, so Ning Biluo must be short for energy at the moment. Boundless Saint had also consumed a part of his energy, but he recovered during those few seconds. He was in a perfect state.

Even though Ning Biluo was stronger than him, at this moment, Ning Biluo should not be able to defeat him! In others' eyes, Boundless Saint attacked because of anger, but in fact, he did it because he thought it was the perfect moment to defeat Ning Biluo once and for all!

However, things went beyond Boundless Saint's plan. Ning Biluo had made an attack around the house and didn't slow down at all. He rushed up to the sky and became like a thunder striking right on Boundless Saint fiercely!

"Do you really think you can stop me!" Ning Biluo's voice coldly came from the sword light. "You don't have that capability to defeat me. Facing you, I can be as arrogant as I want!"

"No matter what I want to do, I just do it. You are too weak to stop me!"

Boundless Saint's face behind the mask turned red because of anger.

However, Ning Biluo was in a human-sword mergence status. It was his most powerful attack. Boundless Saint had to give up the plan and move away.

If he still went for the crash, Ning Biluo wouldn't be short for energy like he imagined. Instead, he would be fierce and powerful. That was his perfect status. To fight him in such situation was to seek for death.

However, there were always plans. Boundless Saint was never good at hard fights. He suddenly moved around fast like ghost. Because he moved so fast, he looked like a mass of fog, floating around Ning Biluo. Needles were flying in the air everywhere. - Shoot, shoot, shoot. - It was hard to defend.

Ning Biluo was integrated with his sword at the moment though. Sword lights fully covered his body. When the needles touched the sword light, they broke into pieces. Ning Biluo was also in an extreme fast speed. Boundless Saint was like a mass of fog, while Ning Biluo was like lightning. He was chasing after Boundless

Saint, attacking. If Boundless Saint made any mistakes in defending, he would be hit and seriously wounded. He might even die in an instant.

Five top assassins of Boundless Lake saw that their master was losing, so they got over to help him. They made attacks on Ning Biluo together again. However, Ning Biluo's sword light was long and tough. Even under the attacks of six powerful assassins, he stayed unharmed. Instead, his attacks made the six of them in a muddle. No matter where Ning Biluo's sword pointed, they had to get away as fast as they could. If they ever hesitated, they would be wounded badly. Even though the six of them together were more powerful than Ning Biluo, under his rapid attacks that were like rainstorms, they were divided into individuals. They couldn't fight together at all!

They all had a feeling like each of them was fighting Ning Biluo alone!

Or it was like Ning Biluo was surrounding them by himself!

Ning Biluo was so experienced in fights. He could create such a situation to make every enemy concentrate on their own situation. Those who were watching this battle all exclaimed with praise.

"What a King of Assassins! Marvelous!"

"Fighting against Boundless Saint and his five golden label assassins, yet he can still seize the higher position in the fight. Look at them now. A bunch of men from Boundless Lake were

pressed and hit by Ning Biluo alone! What a scene!"

"That is so strange today... I heard the golden label assassins of Boundless Lake nearly killed Ning Biluo several days ago. Boundless Saint didn't even join them. How come now the six of them couldn't defeat Ning Biluo today?"

"Pah! Nearly killed Ning Biluo? You know nothing about the truth! They poisoned Ning Biluo in advance, that is all... Otherwise, several golden label assassins are not even close to be able to kill Ning Biluo! To end their own lives must be easier!"

"Oh, I see. I was wondering why Ning Biluo suddenly became so powerful today. It turns out the King of Assassins is always that horrible..."

"Ning Biluo is always that strong. You only get to know it now! Stop the fuss!"

...

While people were talking, discussing about him, Ning Biluo became more and more unpredictable. He was nearly impossible to defend now! While his sword was shining, two golden label assassins were injured.

Ning Biluo created over a dozen sword breaths roll over to them. If they stepped aside a tiny bit slower, they would have become dead bodies by now. They might be ripped into pieces!

This time, Boundless Saint jumped out to challenge Ning Biluo himself, because he knew there was deep hostility between him and Ning Biluo!

It was exactly Boundless Lake who made Ning Biluo's assassination group fall back in the days.

Ning Biluo could forgive many people, but he would never forgive Boundless Lake!

He would never forgive Boundless Saint for sure.

...

Chapter 444: Instant Killer vs. Ghost Hand!

They were in extremely two different sides. Naturally, both of them wanted each other to fall!

Therefore, even though Boundless Saint knew he was used on this, he jumped in anyway. At this moment, all assassins gathered together to fight against Ling-Bao Hall.

It was the perfect time to declare a death fight to Ning Biluo. If he didn't kill Ning Biluo through this great chance, he was possibly not going to have another chance ever.

However, Ning Biluo was so powerful. Boundless Saint never had thought that he would end up in this sh*tty situation!

He gritted his teeth and tried so hard to stay defended in the fight. It was impossible to defeat Ning Biluo with an instant kill. He was doing his best, but he was only able to keep the fight go on this way. He was more like struggling before death. However, he had one chance. Ning Biluo was extremely powerful under the human-sword mergence status, but it wouldn't last long. No matter how enormous his energy pool was, there was always a limit. After this, he would become exhausted. As long as Boundless Saint could stay safe till then, he would have that opportunity to fight back!

For Boundless Saint, it was much more important to kill Ning Biluo than to kill Feng Monarch!

This fight depended on which side could stay longer!

If Ning Biluo got exhausted and couldn't keep the human-sword mergence status, when his sword light was gone, the six opponents would definitely fight back like crazy. It wouldn't be strange that he got knocked down by an instant kill!

However, if people in the other side were not cautious enough before that, they would die. They were now trying to keep the fighting going. That was all. Any one of them dying would make them all fail. The other five would die for sure!

To put in a long term consideration, it was surely more optimistic on the Boundless Lake's side!

However, Ning Biluo was still fierce like when he began to keep the human-sword mergence status although it had been quite a while now. He didn't seem tired at all. The six superior cultivators were all in a embarrassed situation at the moment. They started to feel tired first.

...

On the other side, Zhao Pingtian didn't have the good luck like Ning Biluo. He had said that he would kill the enemy, but the truth didn't quite go along his prediction. He didn't know who that enemy was, but he was so tough in martial arts. He was no weaker than Zhao Pingtian even a bit!

Most importantly, he apparently had studied Zhao Pingtian. He knew every move of Zhao Pingtian. That was why he was wise one in the fight. He fought in some specific strategy that aimed at his weak points. Zhao Pingtian tried so hard but was only able to keep himself unharmed in the fight. He didn't make any optimistic approach at all.

Zhao Pingtian's old sword was broken several days before, so he got a new one from Ye Xiao. If he used the old one in this fight, he should have died long ago. Even if not, he should have definitely been in a very bad situation!

The two of them flew up to the sky. After hundreds of rounds, they both got down to the floor because they went out of qi. Before they touched the floor, they were still fighting. When they touched the floor, they both made a turn like two whirlwinds. Whoever were fighting around them were blown away...

When they stood firm, they made another attack on each other. It was even. They both staggered backward. While they moved backward, they both left the staggering images in the air, yet their true bodies were fighting again, crashing into each other. Sword, blade, fist, and kick. They became like a strong whirlwind, blowing to the west and then to the east. No matter how sharp one's eyes were, he couldn't see them clearly...

Suddenly, a shout sounded in the sky. They both rushed up to the sky again...

As time passed, Liu Changjun's situation was getting more and more dangerous...

Seven hundred assassins were fighting in full efforts. The enemies didn't work well together like they did, because the enemies came from different forces. However, the enemies were a big number...

Although dead bodies were everywhere, there were still so many men in black climbing the wall getting inside. They were like tides flooding in Ling-Bao Hall!

The bounty was increasing everyday.

It was close to ten billion now.

Who could stay calm in front of such a number?

Everyone wanted to be the lucky one who knocked it eventually!

Assassins killed for a living. Risking their lives didn't matter at all!

They would die someday anyway. If they got the money, it would change their lives! They could spend the rest of their lives in any way they wanted!

Eyes of the assassins were all red.

Liu Changjun was fighting everywhere to support his men,

however, over a hundred men in his group died!

The number was going bigger!

More and more men in black rushed over... and entered the yard...

Liu Changjun had wounds on three places. Blood came out, but he didn't notice. He just kept fighting and killing!

At this moment, a cold voice sounded, "That is Liu Changjun, the Instant Killer, you can all stay back now... Let me fight against him!"

A shadow rushed into Ling-Bao Hall like a hawk. His narrow eyes were full of vicious lights. He was covered by aura of killings. He looked brutal with no reasons!

It was brutality that would treat life as trash!

Liu Changjun saw him and felt stricken in the heart.

He knew that man. The man had a title, Ghost Hand!

This Ghost Hand had a name, Yin Yucheng. It was a good name, but he was a typical murderer!

He was the No. 5 on the ranking list of assassination!

An assassin of Sky Origin Stage.

He put his hands on the back and walked in step by step. He looked at Liu Changjun with his sharp and cold eyes, which looked like eyes of a hawk. He blandly spoke, "Instant Killer Liu Changjun... Nice... Very well."

Liu Changjun disdainfully spoke, "Ning Biluo and Zhao Pingtian are even better! Do you dare to challenge them?" Apparently, he was taunting him because he picked the weaker one to challenge.

Ghost Hand Yin Yucheng sneered, "Things are going to a dead end. I don't need to go to them and they will die anyway! You, Liu Changjun, you should just focus more on how to die in my hand. Dying in pain or dying with joy are both death, but they will give you different feelings."

Liu Changjun sneered, "It is death anyway! What are you waiting for? Since when a fight between two assassins has to be so nagging? You need to have a chat before the fight? Yin Yucheng, did you learn this from your master's wife? Let me tell you something. Talking to you is an extreme pain in the ass!"

Yin Yucheng humphed. His eyes showed up with killing intent. "What a sharp tongue! You know what. You are dead! I can assure you that I will spend ten days to torture you before you finally stop breathing!"

Chapter 445: Who Wants My Head?

Liu Changjun coldly spoke, "The No.5 assassin in the world, did you talk to get this title? What a surprise!"

Yin Yucheng coldly and viciously spoke, "Liu Changjun, I will ask you one thing. How did you improve so much in such a short time? Tell me the truth and I will give you a good quick death!"

His eyes were full of greed.

[By some special dan beads or some special martial arts, it is a way to improve quickly. I have to figure out how Liu Changjun did it... If he can do it, surely I can!]

[Liu Changjun will die today. So will Ning Biluo and Zhao Pingtian. If Boundless Saint dies in the counterattack of Ning Biluo, it will be a perfect ending. I will become the world No. 2 Assassin!]

[No. If I get the secret how Liu Changjun improved himself so quickly, I may become No. 1. That is possible. That is very possible!]

As he thought deeper, he was immersed in his sweet dream. His eyes were full of greed as he stared at Liu Changjun. He didn't want to miss any move or any word of Liu Changjun!

Liu Changjun laughed. "I brag a lot! That makes me improve!" He

stopped and then spoke with extreme disdain, "I have been just like you, chatting a lot, bragging, and then I got improved. Hahaha. Hahaha."

The laugh was full of disdain. It was wicked.

"You asked for this!" Yin Yucheng couldn't bear it anymore and drew out his sword!

His sword was all black!

In the dark, his sword was nearly invincible like it was a part of the night.

Before he moved, Liu Changjun had rushed over to him. Facing this No. 5 Assassin in the world, who was in a higher ranking than himself, Liu Changjun actually made his attack first!

In Ling-Bao Hall.

In the highest floor of the house, there were a bunch of men in black standing beside the wall.

Inside the room in the middle of the house, Wan Zhenghao nearly filled up the room with his giant body. He was staring at things outside.

"When do we move?" It was Long Tianyun speaking.

[As alliance to Ling-Bao Hall, we can't just watch, can we?]

[I really don't understand why Feng Monarch wants us to ambush here.

The fight is going on like storms there, and Ling-Bao Hall is losing it. He actually does not want us to help.

If we go help them, things would have been much better than this!]

Long Tianyun and his men didn't really want to get involved. This was not just some quarrels in martial world. It was life and death!

Once they got into that fight, it was very likely they would die there!

However, for their clans, they were prepared to go sacrifice themselves, even though they knew they would die there.

Feng Monarch was there, and Wan Zhenghao told them to wait.

"I didn't say you shouldn't get into the fight..." Wan Zhenghao's face was shaking, "Thing is... Those who attack us are all assassins in the martial world... The two kingdoms out there and the savageries from north and south hate us like hell. There is still no

sign of their men yet..."

"None of the sects in the world took moves yet..." Wan Zhenghao frowned and said, "Now it is not a good time for you to make a strike... The sects are all waiting for you to show up at the moment! I don't know what would happen if I let you go out now. Things might go worse..."

Everybody took in a deep breath.

That was true. It was possible!

Why hadn't those strong forces taken moves yet?

Wan Zhenghao had lived thousands of years. Situation was dangerous at the moment, but he was still calm. That was so shocking. He was a thousands years old man after all!

The fat on his cheeks shook. He looked outside the window and said, "Let's just wait... When Feng Monarch comes, he will make the decision."

He somehow realized that this Feng Monarch had become the mainstay of them all. Even Boss Wan, whose position was snatched by Feng Zhiling, now accepted it already!

"Feng Monarch..." Someone of the five clans twitched his mouth.

[Ling-Bao Hall is in great danger. It is important to save the situation. If Feng Monarch isn't a fool, he will never show up here now!

Those men in black haven't destroyed this place yet, because those strongest ones are waiting for Feng Monarch, whose head is wanted with a bounty of billions!

If Feng Monarch returns, those assassins will definitely be enraged and rush over to get his life!

When that happens...

Even if Feng Monarch has three heads six arms, he will die soon eventually!

At this moment, Feng Zhiling can just flee away. He can get another chance to rise again in somewhere else. He can make supreme dan beads, so it won't be a difficult job to rebuild his career!]

The men who were fighting on the roof suddenly made some bomb noise!

Ning Biluo and Zhao Pingtian were both anxious now!

They were both kept in fights. Even though they could hang on with it, it wasn't a good thing for Ling-Bao Hall. After a while of fighting, they both felt completely warmed up. They both started

to make fatal attacks!

Things were getting worse for Ling-Bao Hall down on the floor now. If they didn't go down to help, the seven hundred men of theirs would die out!

It included Liu Changjun.

Liu Changjun was losing in the fight against Yin Yucheng now.

At this moment...

A shout resounded from distance in the sky. It was clear, loud, calm and indifferent.

"Who has the gut to attack my Ling-Bao Hall?"

People no matter from which side, and those who had been watching the fight, waiting in the dark, all looked to the south where the sound resounded!

It was Feng Monarch's voice!

Feng Zhiling finally came!

At this most dangerous moment, when everybody thought that he wouldn't show up and had fled for his life, he came!

The south in the night.

A shadow came along the wind. His black robe was floating in the wind. His bland eyes were looking down upon the crowd from a higher position. He blandly spoke, "Who wants my head?"

...

Chapter 446: Fight for the Head!

Everybody was shocked. They didn't know Feng Monarch would really show up!

At this moment, things were worse on Ling-Bao Hall's side!

[Is he looking for death now?]

The crowd was just silent for one second, and then it burst into chaos.

"I feel like I am looking at a gold mountain, shining in golden lights, showing up in front of me..." An assassin was greedy; looking at Ye Xiao obsessively, it was as if he really was looking at a mountain of gold.

Those who heard him all made the same gesture to agree. They nodded.

Feng Monarch was exactly like a gold mountain at this moment. And it was not an ordinary gold mountain!

It was a gold mountain that connected the sky and the earth! That big!

Even a giant gold mountain might not be worth more than Feng Zhiling's head!

- Shoot, shoot, shoot. - People came up like rainstorm from everywhere. Within seconds, Ye Xiao was surrounded by a big crowd of people!

There were at least four thousand men.

This place wasn't spacious. Over four thousand men suddenly showed up. It truly was a great scene. People in the outside circle was off the sight already. The sounds of people shouting sounded from distance. There must be more people gathering over...

Their eyes were all staring at Feng Monarch with greed.

In fact, they were staring at his head. That was all.

They were like staring at tons of gold.

Their eyes looked greed.

Ye Xiao sighed inside his heart while looking at all this of people here, waiting to take his head off.

He had never thought that he would end up being hunted by everyone. Life was tough!

He had been hunted by many sects in his previous life, but he had never been hunted like this. He was enemy to the entire world

now!

There were many assassins in the world. However, not all of the men in black here used to be assassins! Many of them acted as assassins so as to try to kill Feng Monarch. No matter who killed Feng Monarch, he got the money!

"I know my head means a lot of money. It is very precious. Super precious." Ye Xiao blandly smiled as he pointed at his head. He spoke with a smile, "To be honest, I am kind of proud. Not everyone has a head that worth this much like mine."

"At least, you here, all have worthless heads!"

"Your heads are cheap!" Ye Xiao coldly spoke.

Whoever heard him, no matter on which side, all staggered.

[What the hell!

Somebody put a big bounty for your head and you are actually proud of it?]

Well it was a great achievement thought!

However, the words he said, 'your heads are cheap' pissed many assassins.

"Our heads are cheap compared to yours, but our lives are much longer than yours," an assassin coldly talked back, "When a man's head is too worthy, it will be very difficult for him to save his head. What do you think, Feng Monarch?"

This guy's words pleased many assassins.

"That is right. Our heads are cheap. What a shame, your precious head is going to be cut off by us!" Another assassin sneered.

"That's right. Our heads are cheap, but they will stay where they are!"

"Whose head is still on his neck. It is really hard to say before tonight ends," Ye Xiao indifferently spoke, "You are all assassins. I shall give you an advice."

"The advice is here. If somebody's head is precious, then this man's head must be difficult to cut off. Those that are easy to cut off must be some cheap heads."

"Next time when you accept a mission, don't just look at the price of the head. You need to think carefully, whether you can keep your heads on your necks after you take that mission or not."

Ye Xiao's words convinced many assassins in their hearts.

Those were definitely words of wisdom for assassins.

However, Feng Monarch was no assassin!

"You want my head. I understand it. No matter who take my head will live on a wealthy and happy life. His children, grandchildren and the next generations after that will be rich... In fact, I want to support you really."

What he said shocked the crowd. They were all speechless and stunned.

[What... What the hell is wrong with him. We are here to kill you. We want to cut off your head for money. You understand us and you support us?

Are you human being? What is wrong with your brain? Are you insane?

Do you even have a brain? Is your brain rotted?]

"I know your lives are tough. You just want to live better. I want a happy life too. Everybody does."

Feng Monarch kept talking like a fool, "So, I can't give you my head. I think you should try to understand me too. We all have the same thoughts. I understand you, so you should understand me too, don't you think?"

"After all, this is my head on my neck. Right?"

[Understand?

Surely we understand!

Nobody wants to lose his head for somebody else's reward.]

"So, we are dead enemies on this issue. No matter how it ends, I kill you or you kill me, it is just how it goes. Don't have any negative feelings." Feng Monarch nodded to the crowd of assassins decently.

"You want that money, you will have to cut my head off. I want to save my head, so I have to kill you... Is it right?"

Feng Monarch kept saying heads. Your heads, my heads, like he was saying a tongue twister. It made them feel buzz in the head.

"Well, it surely is reasonable." An assassin looked at Feng Zhiling with confusion. "What Feng Monarch said is mostly rubbish talks. Are you trying to delay the fight? To be honest, it doesn't work!"

Ye Xiao blandly smiled. "Of course it brings no good for me to delay the fight. More time I waste, more people will come. I don't have any back support... So, I won't delay anything. I just want to ask you one more thing before we start to fight for these busy heads! No matter who dies and who lives, I promise the one who dies will die in glory under the watch of everybody!"

...

Chapter 447: Local Assassins in Kingdom of Chen?

Many of the assassins had reservation on the situation because Feng Monarch was acting so casual.

At the moment, even Yin Yucheng flew over from the fight against Liu Changjun. Liu Changjun was a strong opponent. Yin Yucheng seized the higher position in the fight, but it would take time to take Liu Changjun down. Feng Zhiling suddenly showed up and he thought Feng Zhiling might die at any time. Liu Changjun had the martial art and dan beads he wanted badly, but those were worthless compared to the head on Feng Zhiling's neck.

He thought for a while and then made up his mind. He made a strong strike to force Liu Changjun back, and then he got over to Feng Zhiling fast. He stared at Feng Monarch, whose head was worth billions, as he coldly asked, "What do you want to ask?"

Ye Xiao looked indifferent. He blandly said, "I have a simple question. I just want to know, among so many assassins here, how many of you are local assassins in Kingdom of Chen?"

People were shocked. They would have never thought that Feng Monarch would ask such a question in this situation.

Many of them started to avoid eye contact. Some of them who knew each other's identity started to look at each other.

Were there any citizens of Kingdom of Chen?

Certainly!

It was emergence into prominence in times of crisis at the moment. All assassins gathered together here. How could local assassins not show up?

In fact, the first group of assassins arrived was a bunch of local citizens. Old horses knew well the paths. That was their advantage!

"No matter you will admit it or not, I know you are here. I am confused and upset. People from Kingdom of Tianyu and Kingdom of Lanfeng wants to kill me. People from outside Kingdom of Chen wants to kill me. I get it. I can understand. We are in hostile positions. It is reasonable to kill other country's support. But, assassins in Kingdom of Chen wanting to kill me. I don't understand. I am confused!"

Ye Xiao slowly spoke, "Kingdom of Chen is under a dangerous situation with enemies on four sides. The kingdom is perilous like a piling up eggs. Millions are fighting in the frontlines to protect our homeland. What have you guys done, as citizens of Kingdom of Chen?"

"We, Ling-Bao Hall, are businessmen, but we know our responsibility as citizens of the country! We held an auction, offending every force in the world, giving our full efforts... We raised seventy billion for the country! We solved the financial problem! Ling-Bao Hall has done more than enough for Kingdom

of Chen!"

"That seventy billion brings us the current situation. Now we are in great danger and we will collapse at any second."

His cold voice was resounding in the dark sky, "No matter you are assassins or ordinary folks, as citizens of Kingdom of Chen, shouldn't you do something for the country? However, you have done nothing, and you are here trying to kill me, a man who just gave this country seventy billion. Isn't it disappointing?"

Ye Xiao coldly looked around those assassins' masks, "Ling-Bao Hall donated seventy billion to the army, to those who are sacrificing themselves to protect your homes... And you, you came here to cut my head for that filthy money!"

"I am not trying to tell you any great moral principles. I won't. I just want to know, how many people among the crowd are ingrates."

Ye Xiao sneered, looking at the countless assassins with cold eyes. "Anybody brave enough to show yourselves? Stand out and let us see?"

"Even if I am going to die, I want to know whether I die in the hand of my own people or the sword of my enemies!"

It suddenly turned silent. It was awkward silence.

A stalemate!

Ning Biluo and Zhao Pingtian stopped fighting too. They were coming over beside Ye Xiao. The fights didn't last long, but it consumed lots of their energy. A stalemate was good for them. At least, they could rest for a while.

Ye Xiao stopped them. "Don't get over here. Let me have a look at the... heroes of our kingdom."

In fact, most of the assassins weren't people of Kingdom of Chen. There was only a fraction of them here.

Suddenly, intentionally or not, they were separated into two groups.

Most of the men in black masks looked at those who were people of Kingdom of Chen with disdain.

They were fighting side by side for a long time, so they knew about each other more or less... They knew who were local and who were not.

Some of them didn't know it, because they were weak and not qualified enough to know that information. Some of the famous ones were well informed.

Local assassins and adventive assassins, they became two groups!

Many assassin seemed ashamed, and then they looked at Feng Monarch, having a few thoughts. Suddenly, they looked more vicious.

Apparently, the huge money attracted them more than dignity. They betrayed their country, but they didn't care now. Kingdom of Chen was surrounded by enemies from all sides. It was exactly in the same situation like Ling-Bao Hall now. They reckoned the kingdom would be replaced soon. Kingdom of Chen would soon become just a name in the history. What they wanted now was something more realistic!

At the moment, fires and smothers were bursting more and more drastically. Sounds of fights came from everywhere.

There were fights in every sides.

"Now the assassins and secret troops of other countries have invaded the Chen-Xing City. While you are trying to take my life, they are destroying our country. You people are murdering here, trying to kill a man with honor. You are here trying to take my head to exchange for money..."

Ye Xiao was cold and calm. "Are you even human beings?"

A man in black looked at Ye Xiao sneering, "Feng Monarch, don't ever try to play any tricks here... No matter what you say, you are dead today! ..."

This man had just finished talking when another man in the crowd sighed and suddenly jumped up to the sky. He became a dark lightning in the sky and disappeared immediately.

...

Chapter 448: Poison!

The man only left his voice behind.

"I, Chen Zhizhong, failed the Kingdom of Chen. I am too ashamed to show my face. Feng Monarch, I wish you good luck... If you can survive this, I will come back to apologize myself!"

His voice was resounding in the sky, while he had already gone far.

Chen Zhizhong!

The name shocked Ning Biluo and Zhao Pingtian.

The No. 4 Assassin in the world!

This guy was even above Yin Yucheng on the ranking list. His achievement was so close to Zhao Pingtian. Nobody had thought that he would come. He had been hiding among all those assassins... If he didn't say his name, Ning Biluo and Zhao Pingtian would never know he was here too. This guy was good at killing discreetly. He usually only used one strike to take the enemy's life. That was what he was famous for. In the Land of Han-Yang, he was the best in discreet assassination.

[What if he sneaked close enough to us and made his famous strike, could we survive that?]

Ning Biluo and Zhao Pingtian were both frightened by the thought. They couldn't be sure that they could survive Chen Zhizhong's killing strike!

They were surprised that Chen Zhizhong was actually a citizen of Kingdom of Chen!

Luckily, Chen Zhizhong left!

After that, dozens left after him quietly.

"It is a lot of money. We are merciless assassins. However, we are ashamed. Take care, Feng Monarch!"

Dozens of them chose to leave.

Ye Xiao sighed in his heart. [These men are, although assassins... have a sense of honor. In front of this attractive bounty, they need courage to leave under this situation.]

Those who stayed hesitated and then lowered their heads.

They didn't leave.

Nobody left now!

After all, Feng Zhiling's head... meant too much to them!

It was an enormous attraction!

Not many people could resist!

Such a great opportunity was in front of them. What a precious head. It would be such a shame to give it up for others...

[Feng Zhiling must die!

Then why give it to others?

Chen Zhizhong cherishes his reputation and gave up such a great opportunity. He must have left his brain at home. That is why he can't take away others'. Such a powerful opponent left. Isn't it a blessing from gods?!

More assassins left after him. As assassins, they talked like they were some honorable figures...]

Many local assassins had such thoughts.

"Feng Monarch, cut that crap already. Don't ever think about playing this trick." An assassin from Kingdom of Lanfeng laughed. "That is so much money. I can even kill my father for it, let alone Feng Monarch, someone I'm not even familiar with... Haha. Only fools will talk about honor and dignity in this important moment! Ling-Bao Hall is falling now and Kingdom of Chen will fall after it.

It is destiny!"

Ye Xiao nodded. "That is quite right actually. I think about that too. However, you here are, so obviously, you are trying to kill me. I don't want to die, so I will kill you. I was just worrying I may kill someone honorable... I have to give myself a reason to kill anyway."

"Now I have thought it through. I have the reason. Clear and loud."

Ye Xiao blandly looked around at those assassins. "I don't care who you are. I have enough reasons to kill you!"

For the first time since he showed up, he moved. He slowly stepped ahead. In his eyes there was splendid lights. An enormous aura of killing rose up to the sky!

"Those who stand on my way die!"

Ye Xiao coldly spoke.

"Kill him!" a man loudly shouted and rushed over first.

Assassins would be afraid of Ning Biluo or Zhao Pingtian because of their titles. Even Liu Changjun would frighten them. However, they would never be scared of Feng Zhiling!

As one man had moved, the others wouldn't want to be left behind. They rushed over like tide.

No matter how Feng Zhiling was good at hiding his true strength, no matter how powerful he was, how could he defend the attacks from such countless enemies?

Under everyone's watch, he suddenly stepped back.

At the same time, on his body, a mass of dark fog burst forth!

The fog rapidly rolled and spread around.

Within seconds, it covered the area of sixty meters in diameter. It kept spreading in the same speed. It was spreading wider.

Nobody cared about the dark fog really. They thought it was just some vision trick Feng Monarch played. He might just want to escape under the cover of the fog. They sneered in their minds. [Look how heroic when he talked. Now he is trying to flee...]

[I won't be tricked!]

None of them wanted to be the last. They fought so hard to be the first to attack!

Surely, there were some cautious men. They were afraid that the dark fog was more than just vision. It spread so fast and widely.

They felt relieved a bit though. As it spread wider, it should be less dense. Even if it was poisonous, it wouldn't be that heavy. Then they stopped being cautious and rushed into the dark fog. After all, Feng Zhiling might escape while nobody could see him in the fog!

The next moment, somebody said, "What? Why do I feel itchy on my face?"

Another voice sounded, "My god it is itchy. What is going on?"

"My back. Oh my god. What happened? Why so itchy?"

"My eyes are itchy..." Somebody started to rub their eyes.

Suddenly, the hundreds of men who rushed out first started to scream. They hurriedly started to scratch their bodies. That was unbearable!

"Scratch it... It feels so good! So good... Damn it is itchy again... Scratch again..."

"So good... Scratch again..."

They looked painful while scratching, but they were enjoying the feeling somehow. They felt like scratching was something for gods to enjoy now...

However, after a while, they were all shocked. They felt cold on

their back now!

They looked at each other who was scratching and was scared to death...

Those who felt their head itchy grabbed a piece of the skin on the head off the skull... Hair was in their hand...

Those who felt itchy on the back ripped off a piece of muscle from their backs. It was bloody and mutilated...

Those who felt itchy in their eyes grabbed their eyeballs off. Eyeballs dropped down to the floor one after another. A man lost one eyeball, but then he felt another eye itchy again...

...

Chapter 449: Scary

What was most unbelievable was that they had grabbed their skins and muscles off, which revealed the bones inside, yet they didn't stop. It was like they had no feeling about pain. While pulling it off their bodies, they murmured, "Why so itchy? It feels so good... Itchy... Scratch... Good..."

"Scratch... Oh so comfortable... Oh..."

"It is getting itchier... Damn it... It feels better scratching it..."

Finally...

A man was enjoying it, but then he felt his hands sticky. He looked at the hands and felt there was blood and flesh on the hands. He screamed, "What... what the hell is going on? Whose blood?"

People around him looked at him.

His ribs and back were all ripped off. Three rib bones were grabbed off and thrown to the floor...

He actually asked others whose blood it was.

Such weird scene made others feel extremely scared...

He was like so, what about others?

Under people's watch, he rolled his eyeballs and then saw people around him scratching. Fresh skin were scratched off... Someone had just pulled his eyeballs off. Somebody was rubbing the eyes without eyeballs. "Itchy. Itchy... Good. Comfortable..."

The man was scared. He was frightened as he said, "Is this mine..."

He then looked down on himself. He shouted, "My body... My god... That... I... I am itchy... I need to scratch... It feels so good... Oh my god. What is happening to me? Itchy... Good... Good..."

The man was terrified as he looked at his body, yet he couldn't stop scratching it. In his eyes, there was helplessness and desperation, but his face looked enjoying. What a weird scene.

He saw himself taking off the bones in his own body one by one... cracking it down and throwing it away... and then scratching it again... till he grabbed his inner organs out...

The last thought in his mind was, [Is this... this thing in my hand, that I pinched into pieces... is it my heart? It is my first time to see it... Amazing...]

...

Everyone that screamed ended up the same... They scratched

themselves till they died...

People yelled that they were itchy, and they scratched it like hell, making themselves into pieces, falling on the floor, dead. Before they died, everyone... No exception... Everyone's last words were, "I am so itchy! I am so itchy... It feels so good..."

They were itching till death and they felt good until death...

The dark fog stayed for just a while. It spread away and then disappeared.

From beginning to end, it was only a few seconds!

It only stayed for a few seconds, covered about five hundred people, and these people all scratched themselves to death...

Dead bodies piled up there like hills of corpse. Fresh blood was on the floor, those who didn't feel itchy were all frightened. They felt cold sweat on their back. They kept their eyes opened, and they were half scared to death!

Luckily, they didn't get affected and died, but they were almost dead for fear!

[What... What is this?]

When they saw the bodies, which were lying broken on the floor,

they found the dead men's faces showed that they were actually enjoying it...

Those who saw it were trembling. It was terrifying.

It became silent again. There were people coming over from far away. Somebody was shouting, "Hey! Is Feng Zhiling dead yet?"

"His head is mine!"

"Nobody move!"

They just didn't want others to take the bounty.

While they were shouting, they were rushing over.

That was exactly driving themselves to death!

However, nobody cared what those people from far away were thinking. They were frightened as they looked at Feng Monarch in his flying black robe...

They felt like looking at a ghost!

Poison!

It must be Feng Monarch's poison in that fog!

But what was that poison?

Why was it so fierce and vicious, so... unbelievable?

Nobody had ever heard of it.

All these assassins were well informed figures in the martial world. That was why they dared to mess with Ling-Bao Hall.

They were well informed; they were experienced! They all carried medicines that could cure some poisonous injuries! That was something people should take everyday if they wanted to live in the martial world.

It wasn't easy to poison them in normal days, let alone to kill them by poison!

However, Feng Monarch had just put out a mass of dark fog, and four hundred and eighty-seven men got poisoned!

And they all died!

Four hundred and eighty-seven superior cultivators in the world became pieces of flesh on the floor... nearly at the same time. All Feng Monarch did was just to wave his hand...

They started to look at Feng Monarch in another way!

[What the hell. What... What is this guy?]

[Are we assassins or is he the real assassin? I don't know what vicious, brutal, and cold blooded mean anymore. This is far more than that!]

[He is this powerful, then why did he have to talk so much?]

[Ning Biluo and Zhao Pingtian should just stand aside for him. Look how efficient he kills!]

He had killed nearly five hundred men with just waving his hand. Five hundred men were all superior assassins in the martial world, and they all died!

It was more than just scary. It was a legend! It was a myth!

Yin Yucheng was sweating. He hadn't rushed over first.

Now, he started to feel lucky about it. He was so scared now that he felt weak on his legs.

He hadn't been among the ones of the first group to rush over, because he felt that Ning Biluo was locking on him with qi. Yin Yucheng was busy fighting against that qi, so he didn't have time to get to Feng Monarch first.

He was lucky.

If he had rushed over, now he should have been a part of the dead bodies on the floor!

Ning Biluo's qi actually saved his life. Savior!

...

Chapter 450: Comfortable Till Death!

About this mysterious poison, Yin Yucheng had no confidence to deal with it at all!

Such poison would never care about whether he was No. 5 or No. 6. He would be killed mercilessly.

"What kind of poison is this? What on earth is it?" Yin Yucheng kept screaming, with his eyeballs popped up as he stared at Ye Xiao.

Ye Xiao blandly spoke, "Look at you, how ignorant. You wouldn't know it even if I told you. I don't think I should waste my time to tell you!"

He talked in such a casual way, yet he had been quite nervous in fact.

He had talked a lot about local assassins, this and that... He talked a lot, not just for patriotism education... He talked so nobly, like he was so honorable, but in fact he was trying to buy more time. That was what he wanted!

Since he had that conversation with Zuo Wuji and anticipated the possibilities, he had been preparing things that he might need to use in the battlefield.

He knew he would never defeat such an amount of assassins by

real fights. That was obvious.

He never planned to do it that way.

He couldn't win in hard fights, but he had more crooked ways to kill these men.

He had been looking for some poisonous materials, grass, worms, and anything he could find that was enough to kill a lot of people. He used these materials to make a special poison. He had been working for so long till he successfully made one.

Those poisonous materials were all inside the Wood Space.

That poison fog was the result of his hard work. Well, it was one of the results!

Surely, he didn't do that much to make the poison. He just parted the poisonous bits from those materials and then gathered them under the Egg's butt. He just let the Egg, or the Spaces to make the poisonous dan beads!

He only gave it one prescription.

It would only be one kind of poisonous dan!

That was what he wanted—a poisonous dan that would explode into a mass of fog when he threw it out!

It wasn't special in the Qing-Yun Realm.

It wasn't used often, but experienced men would know about it. In fact, most people knew it.

It was called Comfortable Till Death!

A master poison maker, the Poison Sage, was famous for this kind of poison.

It had such a name because whoever was hit by this poison, he wouldn't feel anything wrong. When he was poisoned, the poison would numb his nerves. It would make the muscle rot, but wouldn't give the man much feeling. He would just feel itchy. When he felt itchy, he had no other negative feelings. As he scratched it, he would feel extremely comfortable.

It would never stop being itchy. The man would have to scratch it on and on, enjoying the comfort from it!

The itch and the comfort would last until he killed himself, or when he couldn't scratch himself anymore. Even when he died, he still looked comfortable...

He was comfortable till death!

That was why to be poisoned by this was one of the 'Nine Weird

Ways to Die’.

Comfortable to death!

Basically, it could be a peaceful way to die really... It wasn’t really that vicious... Ye Xiao would rather make some poison like pestilence to torture these men, but he didn’t have enough materials. He could only make Comfortable Till Death.

He didn’t have a lot though!

The Space was making it all along. No material wasted. However, he had only five poison beads.

The five beads had made quite an effective explosion. It was beyond his expectation. He himself was shocked too.

[When I killed the Poison Sage, I got this book of poisons. I thought what it said about Comfortable Till Death must be bragging. It turns out it truly is that powerful when it was perfectly made!]

He was thinking.

[Poison Sage’s Comfortable Till Death could only poison about eight people at a time. Those who are beyond Dream Origin Stage can even drive the poison out by operating their martial arts. However, this time, I used one bead, and yet it killed nearly five hundred men. None of them survived. Incredible. Is it because

these five beads are in higher level...]

He was truly shocked.

[I wonder if Dream Origin Stage cultivators can drive the poison out of their bodies... if they are hit by this poison that is made by Brother Egg?]

Ye Xiao was thinking.

[Well, no matter what, it is impossible to test it here. Land of Han-Yang has no Dream Origin Stage cultivators.]

- Shoot, shoot, shoot... -

Assassins rushed over from far away. Some reckless ones saw Feng Monarch standing there casually, so they just ran over.

Ye Xiao humphed. He finally started to move.

Assassins might be afraid of the Killer King and the King of Assassins, but Feng Zhiling was also unbelievably strong!

Except several true superior cultivators, Ye Xiao didn't fear any other assassins now.

Before this, when he was still beneath Sky Origin Stage, he

played Liu Changjun in hands, who was one of the top ten assassins in the world. Now he had the poison beads produced by the Egg, and he had been improved a great deal. He wouldn't care about those assassins!

The assassins in front of him were standing separately. If he used the poison bead, it would only hit twenty, maybe thirty assassins. It wasn't worth it. It wouldn't help him anyway.

However...

"Watch my poison!" He waved his hand like he just had done.

Suddenly, countless assassins started to back off like crazy. Only several of them were still rushing to get Ye Xiao. They had just arrived, so they didn't know what had just happened...

Those who had backed off just waited and watched, waiting for the horrible dark fog to show up again. They waited and waited, but they saw nothing happen.

Several assassins who had been fighting Feng Monarch were still safe, attacking vigorously. They seemed to push Feng Monarch to a negative position now. Feng Monarch might be killed at any second!

People were happy but couldn't make up their minds. They just looked at each other.

Chapter 451: Fraud in War

After a while, many assassins were afraid that those men might really kill Feng Monarch and get the bounty, so they stepped ahead a few steps.

"How dare you. Watch my deadly poison!" Ye Xiao waved his hand again.

People embarrassedly backed off again.

Nothing happened...

The men who were attacking Ye Xiao were confused. [What is this? Playing smart? Playing smart in groups?]

[He was just shouting 'poison', and thousands of assassins trembled and backed off at the same time...]

[But nothing happened.]

[What is wrong with those men? Are they out of their minds?]

And then some of them started to come closer slowly, surrounding Ye Xiao...

"Watch my poison!" Ye Xiao shouted.

- Clap-clap... -

All backed off!

"My poison!"

- Clap-clap... -

"My poison!"

"??"

"My poison..."

People didn't back off now.

They just viciously stared at Ye Xiao.

[Bastard. He has run out of poison now. He is bluffing, buying time...]

[Motherfucker. What a prick. Played such tricks several times. Those who just arrived have pushed him into a corner, but it was just close to kill him. How lucky!]

[What if they did kill him when that prick was bluffing us! That would be sad!]

"Watch my..." Ye Xiao waved his hand again.

"Watch your ass! Let's go!"

People rushed over at the same time!

They didn't care about what Ye Xiao would say anymore.

[Watch your ass!]

[We know you are out of poison! You think we are fools?]

Ye Xiao humphed and smiled. He waved the hand!

"Watch my super poison!"

He shouted, like he had done a while ago... but he seemed vigorous this time!

The man who rushed in front viciously shouted, "Watch you ass, you cxnt! Come spread your fxcking poison now! Let me see what you got!"

The next moment, his face changed. His face turned dark and

grey, full of desperation!

As Ye Xiao waved, a dark fog truly burst out.

This time, the assassins were gathering together.

The fog rapidly spread.

Those who were rushing over all got hit!

"Itch... Itchy..."

Those men who kept attacking Ye Xiao screamed out at the same time and then they started to scratch...

"Itch..." Many people started to moan too. There was a man in black mask. He found himself itchy, and he was frightened. He remember what happened to the last group of people. He totally freaked out and started to cry with tears desperately...

He had seen what happened to those men. He couldn't help to imagine what would happen to him now.

"I was wrong... Feng Monarch... Please, mercy... Please, I beg mercy. Save me... Ahh..."

A man scratched his body and face and begged for life. He got

down on his knees, kowtowed to Ye Xiao and begged, "Help me... Please... Help me..."

Ye Xiao coldly looked at him. He coldly looked around. Everyone was screaming. He looked at those who were desperately scratching themselves. In his eyes, there was only coldness and murderous look.

Somebody tried not to scratch the skin. They started to operate their martial arts in an attempt to push the poison out.

The poison was from the upper realm, and it was made by Brother Egg in the Space. Surely, they could never drive it out with their weak cultivation capabilities. They only kept trying for a while before they started to scratch again. Itch... Comfort...

After a while.

There were more several hundreds of corpse. It was more than the last group.

Those who survived and wanted to kill Feng Monarch started to back off together.

In their eyes, there was only fear!

They looked at Feng Monarch as if looking at a demon from ancient times.

He waved his hand twice... More than a thousand assassins in the world died!

[What was that?]

[What is that poison?]

Nobody had heard about such a poison ever! What a fierce and overwhelming poison!

The Poison King, Poison Queen, Poison Monarch, and Poison Master in Land of Han-Yang meant nothing compared to this. They weren't even qualified to be Feng Zhiling's slaves! That was overwhelming!

On the other side, on the roof.

Ning Biluo and Zhao Pingtian was shocked too!

[Since when... Monarch has such unbelievable poison?]

Ning Biluo sighed. "Maybe we should know it earlier. A master dan-maker, who can make supreme dan beads, how hard would it be for him to make some supreme poison beads? He can save a life as well as take a life. One in and one out. It is always easier to kill than to save. Isn't it?"

Zhao Pingtian nodded to agree!

"Feng Zhiling, you are too vicious! We are all people in martial world. Do you have to use such a vicious method? Don't you fear divine punishment?" A man in black with a mask cursed. He was frightened but also angry!

[How... How can he do such a vicious thing?]

[We are here to kill him, that is true... But... It is reasonable. He said he could understand us. He shouldn't do such horrible thing on us...]

As he said so, people all felt weird.

A black figure showed up.

- Pah! -

The man who just talked was slapped away on the face hard by that black figure!

In front of him, it was Boundless Saint standing there.

"As an assassin, you kill people or you get killed! In this war of life and death, everybody can use whatever he can as long as he can kill the enemy. You are an assassin, yet you say those words. You ashamed us all!"

Boundless Saint spoke in a vicious way, "You think you can kill him and he cannot protect himself? How can such a vile man like you be an assassin!"

"That is right!" On the other side, Liu Changjun acclaimed, "Boundless Saint, it is the first time you said something I feel reasonable. That's right. These men are smearing the names of assassins, the sacred and honorable job! Death would be too easy for him. He should be cut in pieces slowly before he died and all men in his clan should be killed!"

The assassins looked at each other...

[Assassins?

Sacred and honorable?

What... Really?]

...

Chapter 452: Do You Believe It?

[That man talked dishonorably indeed, but his own death is enough as a fair punishment. Cutting his body into pieces and killing his entire clan... That is just too much!]

Even Ning Biluo and Zhao Pingtian were embarrassed. They coughed and turned over their faces, acting like they didn't know Liu Changjun, at least not so well.

Ye Xiao nearly fell down from the roof!

[What the hell is it?

Assassins... I don't think it has anything to do with being sacred and honor? Besides... cutting into pieces... Killing his entire clan... That... Is that something an assassin should say?]

Ye Xiao felt like ten thousand alpacas were running over his heart. He was speechless and embarrassed.

[Liu Changjun, you are really good at talking, aren't you?

You have been such a quiet man in normal days, yet you come up with such words in this special moment!

That... shocked me greatly.]

Luckily, Wan Zhenghao wasn't here. If he heard what Liu Changjun had just said, the image he had of Liu Changjun would probably break down.

In the shadow.

The men of those great sects were looking at the scene with solemn faces.

"It is good that we didn't show up... Otherwise..." One of them said. He hadn't stopped being scared yet.

"I don't know how much poison he had left. What a horrible poison it is..."

"Not much I reckon. Otherwise, he wouldn't need to bluff like that..."

"That's right. Such overwhelming poison must be really difficult to make. He shouldn't have much... If it is easy to make, how come we have never heard of it?"

"Hmm. So in your opinion, how many times more can he use it?"

"One more must be the limit." The man who answered seemed confident. He said, "Maybe he has used it up already. If I am Feng Zhiling and I have plenty enough, I wouldn't play that bluffing trick..."

The assassins in the yard were all stunned!

They looked at the broken bodies on the floor, and they felt cold deep inside their hearts.

Feng Zhiling had made two strikes, and now over a thousand assassins became dead bodies—in fact broken dead bodies!

These men were all elites among them!

Yet they weren't able to defend at all!

What a horrible and splendid victory. Whoever looked at Feng Monarch felt extremely scared now!

Feng Monarch stood still on the roof. He casually spoke, "My apologies. Sorry for scaring you. My poison is a bit overwhelming indeed... I am however, sorry about that."

The assassins looked up at the executioner on the roof who was saying sorry. They just felt speechless.

[You are sorry?

You are sorry and you turned us into blood and pieces. What if you don't feel sorry? What would happen?]

"You can be settled now." Feng Monarch sincerely spoke, "There won't be much of this kind of poison. I have used it up already. Now, I have to fight you with sword and fist. People who don't have the luck to try my poison, I can only say sorry to you. It is difficult to make. I have given all I have to you."

[Are you addicted to lies? Only fools would believe it!]

Assassins kept cursing in their hearts.

[Who would believe you? If you really have used it up, why would you tell us? It is a vicious poison indeed, but it has a limited effective area. You just want us to gather over again, so that you can hit us all at once. Don't you? Isn't it?!]

[If we still believe it, how stupid should we be?!]

[To hell you said 'People who don't have the luck to try my poison, I can only say sorry to you'... What the fxck. What is that?]

All they knew about this Feng Monarch was that he was a superior master dan-maker, who was rich and was the holder of Ling-Bao Hall...

They knew nothing about his marvelous martial art though.

Now they had a new image of him today! This man was

absolutely a horrible figure!

It was well said that all those who succeeded never depended on good luck!

Feng Monarch was truly solid!

Other than his great poison skill, only his cultivation capability was impressive. He was in Sky Origin Stage. Although it was only about level four, not so good, he was professional in many aspects. The supreme dan beads were from his hands, and this poison was extremely good. He was in the middle levels of Sky Origin Stage, yet with such limited capability, he had such great achievements. He was in affluence and he was young. It was praiseworthy for his excellent conduct...

It wasn't good luck that made him the Monarch of Ling-Bao Hall. He earned it!

That world-shocking poison skill... It created horror that shocked everybody.

It should be easy for him to defend from his enemies for a few seconds. Those few seconds were more than enough to him though! He had enough time to spread the poison and slaughter enemies while he was smiling.

Even if he got wounded, as long as he wouldn't die instantly, he could save himself by the splendid dan beads he made himself! He

might be able to get cured immediately!

He could provide that many supreme dan beads in the auction, so he surely would carry many dan beads with him.

It was nearly impossible to kill such a man!

No wonder his head was worth such a huge amount. It was difficult to cut it off really.

Suddenly, none of the thousands of assassins dared to move!

There were still a huge amount of assassins here. They knew they had the advantage in number. If not, many of them might just give up the bounty due to the difficulty. However, nobody dared to be the first to attack now. The ones who went out first would definitely get hit by that super poison. It wasn't hard to imagine the result!

They didn't move, but Ye Xiao wouldn't just wait there.

"The fight begins. Be cautious, you all. Who stands in my way dies!"

Ye Xiao shouted. His black robe flew up. He was like a thunder rushing into the crowd!

- Bang bang! - Two assassins got hit and flew out with blood on

the faces.

- Puff, puff, puff... - The sounds of fights wouldn't stop...

...

Chapter 453: One Hit Poisoned Three Thousand

Many people got slammed away by Ye Xiao. No matter where he went, the assassins didn't dare to defend. They just kept backing off. They looked panic and terrified. Those who didn't have time to back off, or couldn't back off, were all with low cultivation capabilities...

Those who were better kept pushing the weak ones out while they stepped back themselves. Apparently, they were pushing them away to feed Ye Xiao's anger.

However, Ye Xiao wouldn't show mercy. He kept attacking with kicks and punches. He moved like lightning with no mercy.

Within seconds, he had rushed forward hundreds meters.

- Clang! - A sword showed up in his hand. It burst with cold lights. As it glowed around the crowd time and time again, people started to screech...

Ye Xiao had already entered the hall now.

He killed the way in like cutting grasses. The assassins had lost the intent to fight. They were scared. How could they organize a defense force anymore?

At this moment, one of them was suddenly enlightened. He shouted, "He is using a sword? He is rushing and fighting in a tough way?"

People around him were disdainful. [Of course he is. We are not blind. Why shout like that? The truth is obvious. Is it worth shouting for? You think you are the only one with eyes? We are blind to you?]

But then they were all enlightened!

[That's right! He is the one with clear eyes!]

[Feng Zhiling killed along the way over, leaving blood and fresh on the floor. He is using a sword to fight!]

[He is rushing with difficulty!]

[Why does he do this if he still have that world shocking super vicious poison?]

[Has he used up the poison?]

They were not fools. They thought through it within seconds. Feng Monarch's head worth so much. Such a big attraction would surely arouse their twisted minds. They couldn't stand by anymore, as they were now filled with greed again.

Those who had been trying to back off like hell started to stop. They stared at Ye Xiao, like they had seen through Ye Xiao's mind and trying to know whether Ye Xiao was playing any tricks now.

Ye Xiao didn't notice it. He just kept rushing forward.

It delivered a clear thought to the assassins, [Feng Monarch is trying so hard to get into Ling-Bao Hall. He is trying to meet his men in there!]

[When he gets into Ling-Bao Hall's inner hall, he will at least have two super powerful guards, Ning Biluo and Zhao Pingtian!]

[Then whoever tries to kill him will have to pay a great deal!]

[They may get killed at any second!]

They were almost certain that Feng Monarch was having such a plan!

His poison has run out!

"He is bluffing!" An assassin shouted.

"He has run out of poison!"

"That's right! It is impossible that he can have a lot of that

marvelous poison beads! Striking twice has reached his edge!"

"Kill him! Kill him and end all this sh*t! The great money is just in front of us!"

Endless assassins rushed over with red eyes. Some of them who had fled too fast were now furthest from Feng Monarch, and they were regretting.

Yin Yucheng was one of them, the No. 5 assassin, Ghost Hand!

He was always a person who valued one's life the most. Back to the days, he always only accepted those easy missions that he was confident about. If the target was dangerous, he would rather give up. He could have touched Feng Zhiling earlier, but he fled the fastest! At the moment, he was so far away, and it was impossible to get closer again.

He was upset that a great opportunity fled away from his hands. He rushed over so hard, shouting sincerely, "Feng Monarch! Hold on there! Please do not die! Wait for me!"

All assassins, even men of Ling-Bao Hall burst into laughters.

[That is so freaking hilarious!

You want him to hold on? That nobody else kills him? Wait for you? For you to cut his head off?

You sound like trying to save somebody, but you are... That is... unbelievably hilarious!]

Countless assassins rushed in. This time, they were all determined and hurried. They rushed so fast and gathered together. The crowd was twice denser than earlier now!

"Bold! Watch my poison bead!"

Feng Monarch shouted!

"Hahahaha..." Somebody laughed. [Feng Monarch actually tries to play the same trick again? You bluffed many times, now you are still sticking on it. Tricks only work for the first time, don't you know that...]

However, Feng Zhiling had just finished the words, and then a sound of explosion sounded!

People who had rushed closest to him were all stunned... Completely stunned...

A mass of dark fog spread in the densest crowd without warning!

Wait. No. There had been warning a though. Feng Zhiling had warned them again and again, with words like "Watch my poison bead!"...

The assassins inside the dark fog didn't care about whether they were warned or not. They were looking at the horrible fog, panic and scared. It spread out in front of them...

They were all stricken to the hearts at this moment!

They felt cold in their hearts!

Poison!

That poison!

It showed up again!

This time, it spread broader than the last two times. Basically, everyone who tried to gather over was covered by the fog this time!

At least one thousand men were inside the fog!

It was far over one thousand, nearly two thousand now!

Everyone of these men was staring at the fog with dark face. They didn't even think about running away. They knew they couldn't make it!

It was impossible to get away.

When it exploded, the fog covered the place immediately!

Most importantly, these men were cultivators. They were more sensible than normal people. Within an instant, they all felt that itch, which only brought them desperation!

They were poisoned!

Ye Xiao saw that there were so many people gathering over him, so he decided to be vicious and threw out two poison beads at once!

...

Chapter 454: Hero? Devil?

Two poison beads exploded at the same time. Moreover, he operated East-rising Purple Qi to make the fog spread in a super fast speed. It was far wider than the last two times.

Ye Xiao sighed with emotion. If he had enough poison beads, it would be such an easy job to kill all those assassins!

"Ooooooh..." Suddenly, somebody cried with tears, "I am poisoned. I am poisoned... I can't survive this... I regret..."

He cried so hard that tears and snot stuck on his face. His two hands started to scratch on his body, but he couldn't stop it...

Everyone was scratching like crazy...

Some of them kept swaying their weapons like mad men with red eyes, crying and killing others, "I can't live anymore. I am going to drag more to die with me..."

Knives flew, swords swung. They actually started to kill their associates, tearing them into pieces of flesh with blood...

It only lasted for a while before they bended down for the itch. They screamed and threw away their weapons, starting to scratch their bodies. As they scratched, they smiled.

They knew that once they started to scratch, the feeling of comfort would take the last hope for life from them. They would have to scratch themselves till death. Nothing could stop it!

The itch was deep into the bones, driving their human instincts. These poisoned assassins could not think of others anymore!

They had to... scratch!

Those who luckily didn't get poisoned acted like they saw ghosts, trembling, backing off quickly. They backed off in the same pace, fast and neat.

Some of them who were a bit slower were run down by others. They stared with dumb eyes, eyebrows twisting. They were backing off but still watching the scene that was like hell...

"Ahhh... Let's die together..." An assassin kept scratching himself, staring at those who didn't get hit. His eyes turned red, and then he ran wildly into the crowd that was backing off fast.

"We are all here to kill Feng Zhiling! Now that I am poisoned! Why can you escape this? I am dying. Why are you still living? Why?" He screamed like crazy, scratched like crazy, and rushed to the crowd with blood all over his body.

A sword light flashed.

This man was cut into two parts, instantly dying on the floor.

The poison hadn't killed him, yet the sword did.

Ying Yucheng took back his sword. His face had turned pale. He was trembling. His lips were quivering as he shouted, "It is your bad luck led you to this. How dare you try to take other lives with you? You deserve to die!"

Yin Yucheng was a bit of a coward facing death. He always bullied the weak and feared the strong. People usually didn't like him. However, all assassins praised him for what he had done now.

That man knew he would die, so he wanted others to die with him. That was mean. He deserved to die!

After a while, over eighteen hundred men became flesh and blood on the floor. They were all dead.

People looked at this scary scene and felt like it was in hell. The scene of hell showed up again and again, more and more horrible. Everyone turned pale on the face because of fear.

Feng Monarch made a good strike with poison beads. He didn't move, but just stood there with his hands on his back. He stood at the edge of the hell with a cold and calm face, like he was waiting for the living men to get closer.

It was almost dawn.

The wind blew on his black robe. The assassins saw his cold face

and felt like he was a devil from hell. They trembled.

As assassins, they had seen lots of cruelty in the world. They even created some themselves.

However, they all had the same feeling at the moment.

They had never seen such horror in the world... as terrifying as Feng Monarch!

These men were here to kill him, but even they couldn't deny that he was such a sentient man who valued his home, his country. He was no doubt a righteous man!

When his country was in need, he gave it a seventy billion donation!

When Ling-Bao Hall was in danger, he came alone to face the most overwhelming power in the world. He fought against all the assassins!

Such man was definitely a heroic figure!

He was not the hero that people knew as. Heroes in the books all cared about their reputation. They would rather die than lose their heroic character. He, however, never cared about it! He was a hero to his own people, but a crazy demon to his enemy! He was completely a demon! A bloody slaughterer!

He was a devil that made people tremble!

He had only waved his hand three times, and over three thousand assassins died. None of them had left a complete body. Feng Monarch made a hell in the world, yet when he looked at it, he looked like nothing serious had happened!

His face didn't even move a bit.

He was indifferent and cold.

An ordinary man would never have such a strong mind!

"I think I said it before. Whoever wants to kill me will have to pay more than he could. You want to kill me. I understand. I will kill you too. I believe you will understand me like I do to you." As he said so, he moved again. He lifted his foot and then walked ahead.

He walked into where there was full of blood, but he looked like he was walking into a bright path to heaven. He didn't hesitate at all.

He was walking to Ling-Bao Hall.

Surrounded by the assassins, Feng Monarch didn't show even a bit of hesitation. He just casually walked ahead with his hands on

his back as if he was walking in a great bright garden.

On the floor, blood was floating like rivers.

Feng Monarch walked on it, making the blood splash up, but he acted like he didn't see it.

...

Chapter 455: I Am a Good Man

They were terrified, looking at the blood that splashed everywhere. Feng Monarch was making sound with every step on the blood, and the blood flew up. He looked so casual as he sighed. "Such scene reminds me some words. It was some kind of lifestyle that I appreciate."

Everybody was listening to him with complicated thoughts.

[What kind of life does he like?]

"Looking at the flowers come and die, I never am terrified by anything; the clouds move over and away, I don't care if I should go or leave..." He kept stepping on the blood, yet he acted like an elegant man. He said, "I love this leisure life the most."

All the assassins wanted to close their eyes and give a long sigh.

[You made the blood into rivers and the dead bodies into mountains. Now you speak like it is a casual scene to you, like you are an anchorite living a leisure life...]

However, they also felt cold in their hearts.

A man who killed gritting with his teeth was not so horrible, but a man like Feng Monarch, killing thousands while he was talking in a casual way like he was having a tour... A terrifying horror arose in their hearts!

[This man is invincible!]

Feng Monarch was walking. When he saw several heads rolling in the blood on the floor, he stopped. Looking at the heads, he sighed before saying, "People. How difficult is it to live in the world? Since they were born, they had worked so hard to become a superior cultivator. How much difficulties have they come through? But... It is so easy to die..."

"It told us that to choose a right path is very important." He looked up at the assassins with sincerity. He seriously spoke, "Sometimes, you need to keep your eyes bright and clear. Do not be hotheaded. Don't just look at the money. You may lose your heads. Don't you agree?"

Nobody talked. Those who stood in front of him made a few steps back. They looked pale in their faces.

"I am a good man. I don't want to kill people. I have always been kind to people. I try so hard to be reasonable. I show everybody kindness... I have a weak heart... Really. I don't want to kill people. I usually worry about killing ants when I sweep the floor and I always put on a lampshade so that the moth won't fly into the fire..."

He spoke in a commiserative way.

The assassins all trembled. They looked at the scene of hell in front of them and then looked at this man who kept saying he was

kind and he didn't want to kill anybody.

They all felt like a hundred thousand alpacas running over their hearts with sh*ts on their bodies!

They were truly speechless looking at him.

"You made me do this..." Feng Monarch looked casual. His voice was cold and indifferent. While he was walking, he said, "My head is worth a lot, I know. No matter how worthy it is, I can still make you stop being greedy."

"However, your greed is worth more."

"My head is important for me. In your hearts, your heads are much more important to yours than mine to me... However, your greed put your heads at risk. Even if you will become rich, what if you can't live through this? Besides, you will never be able to get rich on this."

"I never show mercy to this kind of people. When I attack, I never hesitate."

He walked with his hands on his back. He didn't operate any of his cultivation capability. He just walked to Ling-Bao Hall totally in a speed of an ordinary man.

He walked over to those who surrounded them with his hands on his back. The assassins were in chaos facing Feng Monarch.

As he walked over, the assassins in front of him tried so hard to get away.

Everybody realized one thing.

If they didn't get away, they would die.

Feng Monarch was no more a gold mountain to them. He was no longer the man they wanted to kill so hard.

He was death itself. He was a god of death who could kill them at any movement!

Wherever Ye Xiao walked over, assassins got away. No assassins dared to stay within ten meters close to him.

There suddenly appeared a ten meters wide path connecting where Ye Xiao was and the Ling-Bao Hall!

It led him directly to the yard of Ling-Bao Hall.

Ye Xiao just walked over them looking right ahead. Nobody dared to move a bit!

"... At first, there were so many people who wanted to kill me. I understand them, but I was terrified. I didn't know what to do. It felt so bad to become an enemy to the entire world." He was

walking and talking. His voice was bland, and he sounded sensitive.

However, whoever heard his words felt terrified and trembled.

Feng Zhiling was like a god of death to them. His voice was like the sound of death to them!

"I then thought it through... Completely... Since everybody wants me to die, I have to let everybody die! You want to kill me for your happy life in the future, but I can also kill you all for giving myself a future. Isn't it reasonable?"

Ye Xiao smiled and said, "In fact, six billion... Is it really that much? The man who kills me can take it all. What about the others? The best they can have is to survive. There will only be one person who can get that money. The others can get no more than a chance to survive. Isn't it so?"

"That is it. That is the truth. People want to cut off my head. The only thing I can do to these people is to chop off their heads instead. That is all!"

Ye Xiao blandly smiled. "I have thought more. Those men, they could place a bounty for my head, so I can put a bounty for theirs too. I have thought that there is no one else in the world who can offer more than I can!"

"After tonight, Ling-Bao Hall will put on rewards! It is luck that

brings us together tonight. I guess I should just tell you something about the reward." He stood on the wall of the yard with his hands on the back. He looked into the yard, and then his face changed.

Apparently, things were not as he expected.

Ye Xiao saw the dead bodies of the assassins on his side in the yard!

...

Chapter 456: Expel Tigers; Swallow Wolves

"I am going to announce the first reward. It takes place at once." Ye Xiao kept his hands on his back. He stood facing his back to the countless assassins outside the wall. He spoke in a low voice, "I announce the first... Tonight, some of you successfully took away many lives in Ling-Bao Hall. Whoever killed my men, I will offer one hundred million taels of silver for his head. Maybe you think it is not that attractive. I would love to make another promise. I will pay as soon as you win the reward!"

His eyes became sad and solid. "However, there is a time limit for this reward. It will only last within tonight! After tonight, all those of you who do not try to get the bounty, will lose his qualification to join Ling-Bao Hall's reward events forever!"

Feng Monarch was right. A number of six billion was unbelievably attractive. However, there will only be one person who could get it. The others would get no more than just survive this fight. Why would they fight for such a diminutive chance?

If they joined the bounty hunt of Ling-Bao Hall, it would be easy to get the money. To think it deeper, six billion and one hundred million made no difference to a normal person really! They both were a wealth that a man would never use up!

However, the success rates were in a great difference!

One night!

Only one night!

One opportunity in one night!

How could they give it up?

Ye Xiao's words suddenly made the situation turn over!

At this moment, everyone was shocked!

Feng Monarch's decision really opened people's eyes!

Money could enslave ghosts, also gods. The magic of money was something ninety-nine percent of men in the world couldn't resist!

Even heroes, great figures, honorable ladies, and famous officials couldn't resist it. As long as the price was high enough to break down the line of their moral sensation, they would be changed immediately!

Money was somehow almighty!

[You want money? So I will give you money. I am going to kill you with money!

Just tell me do you want to die with money?

People give you money for my life, then I will fight them back with money!]

"I think that in this world, there may be nobody else who can make such promise!"

Feng Monarch said something that he was confident in, in an unbelievable way!

It was not that "he thinks", nor that "may be", there was truly no one richer than Feng Monarch of Ling-Bao Hall in the world!

Some of the assassins started to turn pale on face. They sneakily stepped back slowly.

Over a half of the assassins who had killed people of Ling-Bao Hall died in Ye Xiao's poison. There were twenty more who were lucky to survive. They were still staying in the crowd waiting for a chance to attack.

When they heard Feng Monarch, they knew things went wrong for them.

[Did I use up my good luck when I survived the poison attacks?]

Many of the assassins had started to aim at these men. The eyes were even fierier than when they looked at Feng Monarch.

One of them decisively stepped ahead to block another assassin's way, smiling in a vicious way. "Wang Liu! where are you going?"

Wang Liu was a good assassin. He killed two good men in Liu Changjun's group. Now that he was stopped, he surely knew what people want from him!

"None of your business! Move away!" Wang Liu rushed forward.

He didn't think about the six billion anymore. He just wanted to leave this place. It would be a great luck to survive!

However, maybe he did use up his good luck now!

"None of my business? How could that be! You are one hundred million now!" The assassin didn't even finish talking when he struck down his sword like lightning. He didn't even try to cover his killing intent.

At the same time, some other silent assassins got closer with weapons in their hands.

Wang Liu screamed and then about eight places on his body came out with blood. The next moment, the assassin in front of him swayed his wide sword. Wang Liu's head flew up to the air and was grabbed by that man. The man shouted, "This head is mine now!"

Some of other assassins stared at him like devils. They were filled with dissatisfaction.

In the world of assassins, when people finished their jobs, no matter how much he got from it, nobody was allowed to snatch it! It was an iron rule in the assassins's world. Everybody was following it.

If anyone dared to challenge it, it meant this man announced he was an enemy to all assassins in the world!

This rule brought peace and fairness to the world of assassins...

The next moment, people didn't stop screaming. Over twenty assassins all fell down to the blood immediately. Their heads were all chopped off.

"Will you keep your word, Feng Monarch?" One assassin with mask grabbing a head said to Ye Xiao coldly.

Ye Xiao humphed and blandly said, "Small money. Why not. Put down the head. I am going to offer it as sacrifice to my brothers who died tonight! Now, Wan Zhenghao!"

Ye Xiao suddenly shouted his name.

"Yes. I am here!" Boss Wan showed up with his super fat body.

"Give him the money!" Ye Xiao was cold and solemn. "One head, one hundred million! Debt should always be paid!"

"Yes, my lord!" Wan Zhenghao was generous. He took out a thick pile of notes from his space ring.

Twenty-seven assassins all got their money.

They all kept silent. After they got the notes, they just jumped and flew away, disappearing in the night.

Within a short while, things went to an opposite direction really!

Those assassins got the money and felt that it truly wasn't a small amount.

They had nothing more to expect in their lives now!

They realized it was nearly impossible to kill Feng Monarch. It was very likely going to get them all killed tonight. Now that they didn't die, they also got such a big amount of money. That was a good fortune for them!

When they left this place, they even felt relieved that they never felt before...

Finally, they could get away from this demon!

Other than the twenty-seven assassins, one man disappeared too.

Yin Yucheng. The No.5 Assassin, Ghost Hand!

Not many people noticed when he left.

Only Ning Biluo, Zhao Pingtian and Boundless Saint looked to the direction where Yin Yucheng was gone...

...

Chapter 457: He Is Good

Others might not know, but these three fellows had a good guess.

Yin Yucheng must have gone after the twenty-seven assassins who had gotten the money.

They might not be able to see Yin Yucheng again in the future.

Yin Yucheng was, of course, better than any of those twenty-seven assassins. Although they were all superior cultivators and some of them might have been hiding their true capabilities, they were still much weaker than the No. 5 assassin in the world. Yin Yucheng wanted to kill them, and that would be a piece of cake for him.

Every one of them carried one hundred million. Yin Yucheng might want to get all the money from the 27 assassins, or maybe he would only get the money from ten assassins, that would be enough for him to retire from the assassins' world and live a happy life ever after.

As long as he kept low profile and abandoned his name, he would live a happy and peaceful life with money that he could never use up.

In simpler words, he would be out of the martial world forever!

Boundless Saint looked at Feng Monarch with fear in his eyes.

[This man has a shrewd and deep mind.]

"Saint, this Feng Monarch... He is a tough one." A golden label assassin of Boundless Lake spoke in a low voice beside Boundless Saint. Only Boundless Saint could hear him.

People of Boundless Lake had been dealing with Ning Biluo. If not, they should be more capable than enough to kill all assassins of Ling-Bao Hall. However, if they did so, they would have become the ones who were killed just now for the rewards. Boundless Saint was the No. 2 Assassin, but he was not that Intimidating like Ning Biluo. He would have failed to lead his men to escape the hunt. That was why Boundless Saint and his people felt terrified at the moment!

[That was lucky... that we didn't kill anybody.]

"He is more than a tough one. He is horrible!" Boundless Saint was solemn. He lowered his voice as he said, "He used money to make a fight-back. That is a simple and effective way. All those who got the money showed themselves in front of everybody... These men are very likely going to die soon. We all know each other. They will be hunted by someone soon or later. Yin Yucheng is the first one. There will be the second, the third..."

"So this Feng Monarch is taking his revenge and destroying our attack force at the same time."

The golden label assassin nodded.

Boundless Saint showed fierceness in his eyes and said, "Tell others to track Yin Yucheng... No matter how much he gets, I want him to give it all out. He might not be able to get all the money from 27 men, but he will possibly get about seventy percent of it!"

"Yes. I will."

"I don't think we have a big chance to get that six billion. However, I am confident about Yin Yucheng. We might not be able to get six billion, but we can still get a lot amount of money. That is not bad. It is easy, isn't it?" Boundless Saint said.

...

Things changed. It was so dramatic when things changed.

Assassins who had left there all had a weird feeling.

[We are here to kill him. How did we end up getting hired by him now?]

[We are doing this for money, but I feel things is somehow not so right. Where is my dignity as an assassin? Where is my position?]

However, when they saw the eyes of Feng Monarch—that cold like ice and fierce like blade, they had another thought, [Never mind. Position doesn't matter. Dignity is something in the future... To be hired by this man is much better than to be killed by him!]

The attractive six billion bounty was too risky!

"Money is such a good thing!" Ye Xiao looked up and smiled. "I have been ignoring it all the time... I have too much money, that is why I even feel tired of it. The number truly bores me. Now I have thought it through. Money can enslave ghost, also gods, and men..."

"Money can drive a ghost to grind the mill. Sometime, it drives the mill to grind the ghost too. When it is used on some particular work, it works even better." Ye Xiao blandly spoke, "So I decided to dig deeper in how to use money into its limitation!"

"Assassination is a special job. To kill somebody for the money he gets." Ye Xiao stood there with his hands on his back, his voice sounded still, calm and casual. "I truly want to know how painful it is to be an assassin. If any of you can earn your livings or fulfill your dreams by doing something else, you may not want to be an assassin who always risk your lives for money and hide in darkness."

"That is why I always understand it, when you accept my offer or accept offer from others to kill me. I think I have told you many times since the beginning."

"I said something else too. It is one thing that I understand you, but it is another that I will get my revenge from everything that brings me harm. The 27 dead bodies proved my words well. Now, they all become dead bodies!"

Ye Xiao pointed at the 27 heads and coldly smiled. "I may have done this in a hurry today. If there is another time I want to do this, I promise you all, to die quickly like this will be the happiest thing they can feel. It will definitely be an extravagant hope to die like this!"

"It is easy to do that. I can raise the reward and tell everyone to get them to me alive. I will hire good executioners to kill them. To kill their entire clans or to kill them within thousands of cuts are simple. I can make their families live for decades begging for death!" Ye Xiao threatened frankly, "To be honest, I am telling the truth. I am being honest. I have so much money. I am wealthy. So I can surely do that! You. Does any of you don't believe me? If you don't, I will let you try."

All assassins were gasping.

Nobody dared to challenge his words though!

They knew he truly had that capability and that money!

Things had changed. It became positive for Feng Monarch, who had been in a low position at the beginning!

He controlled the whole situation now.

The crisis of being enemy to the entire world was gone just like that!

Ye Xiao controlled the whole thing, and he was prepared on what to do next.

He knew that maybe he had controlled them for now, but the House of the Chaotic Storms wouldn't let him.

He still feared Master Bai, who had been checking on him.

Maybe next moment, the House of the Chaotic Storms would make another unexpected strike to hit him down to the bottom again and things would change again!

Ye Xiao had operated his entire spiritual mind. Even the Egg in the Space was controlled by him at the moment. It was well prepared too... If anything happened that he couldn't handle, he would throw the Egg out at once!

Brother Egg could kill a Dao Origin Stage cultivator... This situation must be under its capability too.

...

"Bravo!" In the air, among a mass of cloud, Ling Wuxie looked at Feng Zhiling with admiration in his eyes. He praised with sincerity, "This man is good!"

...

Chapter 458: Interested

"He had actually created a way that is much easier for you, which you will like a lot. He showed you that although you can never get the bounty for his head, you can still get some money for others. He pointed out that he is rich. He is richer than anyone in the world. No matter what price it takes, he can pay it!"

"You lose something, but you have a chance to get something else because of it. Will you give up a very important job and take a much easier, safer and more attractive one? Although it won't give you more money than the bounty for Feng Zhiling's head, it is still a lot of money. I believe everyone knows the smart choice. Feng Zhiling is not offering just a good number. For a person, it truly makes not much difference to get one hundred million or six billion!"

"That's right!"

"So he actually controlled the entire situation. Most importantly... The men of the five noble clans haven't done anything yet after being recruited by him. They didn't even show up. Because they didn't show up, no super powerful sects dared to do anything first. That makes it all assassins in this place. What Feng Monarch is doing actually works the best on assassins!"

"The first task he wanted to complete was to avenge his men who died. As such, he just gave whoever the money to do it."

"As long as there is someone who takes his money, it sets up a

foundation of such cooperation. In other words, those who have come to kill him became his men for real."

"No matter if they are willing to or not, things are already going this way and will be hard to change."

"Whoever dares to disobey him will become his next target. At the moment, this is the only way for to their survival... Even Boundless Saint doesn't dare to make a sound to disagree right now."

"However, I think he hasn't shown his vicious part yet... These assassins are here to kill him. They all intended to kill him anyway... I think he will never let any of them go."

"Those assassins who got the money didn't finally make it anyway."

"These who are still here are most likely going to work for him. They will go somewhere killing each other for the money... No matter who dies, it is a good thing for Feng Monarch. He doesn't even need to do it himself. He just pays. If I am right, he must have more schemes after this. He will arouse the greed inside these assassins' hearts. For example, he may use those supreme dan beads."

"These assassins may still be rational about the money, but if they can get supreme dan beads after killing who Feng Monarch wants them to, even the most powerful sects will go for the hunt for him."

"At last, there will barely be anyone of these assassins alive."

"That is how he made a beautiful counterattack under the worst situation. He solved the problem and brought himself a great opportunity."

"But... No matter how rich he is, whoever kills him will get his money too. Isn't it true?" Xiu of Heavens asked, "That is an even greater fortune. Does anybody think about that?"

"Xiu-Er, you always miss the process." Wan of Clouds bitterly smiled. "If Feng Zhiling dies, Ling-Bao Hall will belong to Kingdom of Chen. Most of the wealth he has will go to this kingdom. The assassins will get little of it..."

"Besides, it will always go to the most powerful hands. Countless assassins will aim at it. Nobody would dare to touch the wealth from Ling-Bao Hall, because it will make them enemy to everyone in the world."

"Other than that, Feng Monarch showed them his strength. It is nearly impossible to kill him! That is the key of his scheme!"

"It is stupid to kill someone you cannot kill. Going against him will put them into a very dangerous situation. That is why most of them quit. At this moment, if they quit, they may still get something in return. It could be a big amount of money... It is not that dangerous... What would you choose if you were one of them?"

"Even so... Ling-Bao Hall is not that powerful at all. If all these assassins work together, they can wipe it out within one night for sure. Why don't they see it?"

"That is true, but they will never do it this way. That is why Feng Monarch only aims at these assassins. If he plays such scheme on one super powerful sect, it won't work. Men in sects are well disciplined. If their masters gave them an order, they will sacrifice themselves for it!"

Wan of Clouds bitterly smiled. "However, these are mostly isolate assassins... Who could give them orders? Who would they listen to?"

They all lived half their lives alone. Who would they trust? There is no trust among them. They won't work together. Besides, all they want is Feng Zhiling's head. Why would they kill other people in Ling-Bao Hall? Assassins kill for profits. They won't do things that don't mean any money!"

"Feng Monarch knows it well. That is why he can turn this over completely! It looks quite easy, but he has to make sure every detail is right. Otherwise, he will die!"

"That is why I said he is good!"

"He is so good that..." Ling Wuxie thought for a while and said, "If he was in our realm, maybe Meng Wuzhen wouldn't be your master's biggest opponent... Meng Wuzhen may lose that

qualification..."

Wan of Clouds and Xiu of Heavens took in a cold breath.

They thought highly of Feng Monarch as they could, but they never expected that Lord Ling Wuxie would give him such a comment!

"I am very interested with this man. If possible, I may try to recruit him." Ling Wuxie half closed his eyes and wickedly smiled.

..

Chapter 459: Chaos from a Tap of a Finger

Apparently, Ling Wuxie quite liked Feng Zhiling, and Feng Monarch should be comforted that people like Ling Wuxie truly liked him!

"That is a real chaotic storm. Impressive!" Wan of Clouds nodded.

The beautiful eyes of the two ladies were full of admiration.

Nobody expected Feng Monarch could make things change so well in such a desperate situation! It was such an impressive strategy.

When the three of them came, Feng Monarch just made the second poison strike.

They came in a hurry to make sure Feng Zhiling didn't die in this fight; after all, as long as he was still alive, he could make that dan for Master Bai. They had prepared for the worst situation. If Feng Zhiling was seriously wounded and about to lose his life, they would save him with their best effort.

Wan and Xiu were restrained in cultivation, so they couldn't save him. However, Ling Wuxie was a real cultivator from higher realm. Nobody in Land of Han-Yang, even in Qing-Yun Realm could fight against him!

However, things were beyond their expectation. Feng Zhiling

didn't die. On the contrary, he had actually controlled the whole thing. He changed the flow of how this thing went. That was something they couldn't even imagine!

Ling Wuxie was shocked when he saw Ye Xiao spread the poison. He kept his eyes opened and said, "What is that poison? How can it be so overwhelming? It is even hard for me to know what that poison is. Feng Zhiling is truly an extraordinary man. He is not only a great dan-maker, but also a great poison maker. He must be in a great level on poison! Now we don't need to worry. He is safe. Let's just see what will happen next. I wonder how things will pan out."

That was why they stopped there in the sky watching it.

The three of them stayed there. Even if Ye Xiao was in danger, they could save him immediately!

And then they saw Feng Monarch fight against the crowd and then made another poison spread to control the entire situation. At last, he started his money attack unexpectedly!

He actually made a dead situation alive again for himself, making himself stay in a great positive position.

"He is just rich, that is all. He has earned a lot earlier. Look at him, acting exactly like an arriviste. Not that good at all. Humph!" Xiu of Heavens humphed with disdain.

"Heh, heh. It is not just about money." Ling Wuxie smiled. "He has spoken about money a lot, but... Money is just a weapon to him. The most horrible thing he has is not the money. It is the wisdom and capability he has!"

"With just a small effort, he turned over a dire situation into a positive one. He is now holding the initiative position... I have never seen anybody except your master who can do this. This man is the second man who can do it."

Ling Wuxie's wicked face showed admiration.

"You mean he can be in the same league with our master? Ridiculous! How is that possible?" Xiu of Heavens really didn't like Feng Monarch.

"No, Xiu-Er. Feng Monarch is really that good. He might be less capable than Master Bai, but he is in the same league in some ways. He is not that far weaker." It was Wan of the Cloud who said this.

"He seized the chance in a perfect way. He did a great job in analyzing the situation. The last decision he made... All those things he has done mattered. If he did anything wrong in any small things, he would fail!"

"However, he did it perfectly. Such capability is truly admirable."

Ling Wuxie nodded. "That's right. That's what I would say."

"Still, I don't think he is that good. He supported one kingdom to become enemy to all other countries. That was stupid. What wisdom could he have. Even though he did a good job in dealing with this situation, he is just normal. What he is doing now should have been done earlier if he is smart enough. Money is of course something people in this world cannot resist." Xiu of Heavens humphed.

"Wrong!"

Ling Wuxie and Wan of Clouds answered at the same time.

"First, you need to consider what kind of people you are facing. He is facing assassins now! What is an assassin? Assassin is a person who kills for money. Money works perfectly when he is dealing with assassins."

"If he did this earlier than tonight, the reward he posted would only lead to a war. It would be impossible for him to tell which group of men were his enemies. That would set him up into a negative situation."

"What happened tonight is different. He didn't show up early. He let Ning Biluo and Zhao Pingtian show up, not to solve this problem, but to show everyone in the world who he had! He wanted to tell them that he was not easy to kill!"

Wan of Clouds slowly spoke, "It was more like a pre-war message he made to send the two great assassins. He want everybody to know that these two great assassins are on his side. It might not

have a big influence to those sects, but it would shock the assassins. A King of Assassins and A Killer King are more than enough to overwhelm all assassins in the world!"

"So, since they showed up, most of the assassin were shocked and started to worry. They knew that even if they could kill Feng Monarch, they would be hunted by the two great assassins forever. As an assassin, who could escape the hunt of the King of Assassins and Killer King? In Land of Han-Yang, none. Feng Monarch was making his first strike then. It looked like Ling-Bao Hall was losing, but in fact, they were starting to fight back! It was a hint."

"After that, he showed up. He said some bullsh*t first, acting like he was showing weak. In fact, it was another hint. And then he used that poison to shock them. That was his third strike. Then he put away that poison and started to show his martial power. Even if he doesn't have his dan and poison, he is still not easy to kill... That is an important step for him."

"If you are the assassin, your target is powerful in martial art, also great in poison, and someone you can never kill, what would you do?" Wan of the Cloud asked.

"You have to give up and leave. Give up on this mission to save your life. You can never put you life at risk for something you can barely achieve. Money is less important to life," Ling Wuxie answered quickly.

"Right. But would you regret just leaving like that? Would you feel upset?" Wan-Er added.

"Sure. All men would have that feeling."

...

Chapter 460: Blood Swear! Rules!

Feng Monarch was in control of everything at the moment.

He turned the situation over all on his own with no help from anyone!

After this, he did something even unbelievable.

It was crazy indeed!

He was so confident—a total defiance!

Under the watch of thousands of assassins, he asked Wan Zhenghao to put the 27 heads on the altar, in memory of the men who died for Ling-Bao Hall tonight!

"Wield! For my brothers!"

"From now on, no one, no one dares to bully us!"

He had said that he wanted to kill those 27 people for the men who died for Ling-Bao Hall, however, it was a bit too arrogant at this moment. It was overweening!

However, no matter what those assassins were thinking, people in Ling-Bao Hall still burst with emotions.

Liu Changjun nearly cried. Not only him, those who survived from the fight all cried for real.

Liu Changjun and his men were tearing up. They put on the altar quickly.

Under the watch of the cold eyes of those assassins, Ye Xiao put on three sticks of incense and bow solemnly to pay his respects to the dead!

"To brothers who are gone, I am sorry. I was late. I brought you death!"

Ye Xiao sighed. "Brothers, I wish your souls are still with us now. Drink with us. Here I give you blood and heads of our enemies to show my respect to you all. It is a long way to heaven. Take care!"

"At this moment, in this place, I, Feng Zhiling, swear to the entire world!"

He drew out the sword quickly. - Shring! - He cut on his hand and blood poured out. He had been through all the dangerous parts but never got injured, but at this moment, he cut himself on the hand. It was badly injured, and blood poured like water.

He didn't care. His face didn't change a bit. He shouted loudly, "From now on, no matter who dares to hurt my men, Ling-Bao Hall will use whatever we have to hunt him down! Even if I will need to

use up billions money, I won't let the enemy go!"

He was determined, solemn and sad.

All assassins were shocked in their hearts.

Feng Monarch was such a tough man!

He made a blood swear in front of all these people, as if he was making a rule to the martial world. [Whoever dares to mess with Ling-Bao Hall, I will put on billions to get him down!]

[Whatever it takes! I will hunt him down!]

"These are the men who dared to hurt us. Here are their heads! Who dared to mess with us, are now lying here on the ground! All the others of you, listen up now! No matter who you are, No. 1 Assassin or No. 2, Sky Origin Cultivator or Cultivation Master, no matter who the fxck you are... if you try to hurt us, you are on the wanted list!"

"Whoever is against us, we will never sell them any dan beads!"

"Whoever is against us, we provide no resources to them!"

"Whoever is against us, our wealth is the power that sentences them to death!"

"Whoever is against us, we declare hostility to him forever!"

...

Under the watch of everybody, in the faces of all assassins, Feng Monarch of Ling-Bao Hall made a blood swear, threatening the entire martial world!

Everybody was listening to it.

Their faces all looked bad, however, they had to endure it.

To be honest, this was a weird scene.

There were over three thousand assassins right here, and more were coming to join them. Every one of them could be top-class assassins. All these good assassins surrounded here, yet no one dared to move.

Feng Monarch and Wan Zhenghao stopped being in a negative position now. They were holding a ceremony for their dead brothers. Feng Monarch even made a direct threat to all assassins in the world!

No assassins dared to make a sound against it. Not even Boundless Saint! He didn't even move a bit!

That was the magic of money. Money could drive ghost, also

gods. It was the biggest weak point of these men who killed for money!

[Our wealth is the power that sentences them to death!]

What this sentence showed was that he would give up everything to kill his enemies. That was too obvious, too frank. Because of that, it was the most threatening, most horrible, most deadly thing he made!

- Shoot, shoot, shoot... -

There were still assassins coming over fast. Apparently, many of them were still planning to kill Feng Zhiling.

However, when they arrived, they were surprised that nobody was moving at all. They were confused.

"What... is going on? Why are they all standing there? Are they hit on vital points?"

"That man... Isn't he Feng Monarch? How come nobody is moving? What... What is that..."

"Why are there so many dead bodies on the floor. Corpses all over the ground and blood flows like river... Gosh! Those are all assassins' bodies?"

"How did it go so disastrous. What happened? Is Ling-Bao Hall really that powerful? Is it too powerful that no assassins dare to move ahead now?"

Those who just came saw the weird and horrible scene. They were frightened. They tried to figure out what was going on by asking others by whispering.

They started to know partly about what happened. When they figured out the truth, they did the same thing. They widely opened their eyes and mouths.

"Shhh..."

They took in a cold breath.

Cold sweat came out on their foreheads.

Six billion bounty for Feng Monarch's head?

Oh it became a joke now!

Now Ling-Bao Hall was willing to give billions for rewards!

Six billion was big enough. What about the number Ling-Bao Hall gave then? Was it bigger than the heaven!

It was shocking!

It shocked them hard!

In Ye Xiao's mind, [You want to kill me by paying money? Fine. I don't care. I will do the same to you. I will smash you to death with my money!]

...

Chapter 461: All Settled

Smashed with money!

It would be stupid to compete with the richest man in the Land of Han-Yang on money!

Even if several kingdoms worked together, they might also fail. The wealth that Ling-Bao Hall had was beyond people's knowledge!

A kingdom wouldn't use all the money on such thing. There were still plenty of other affairs that needed money.

Ling-Bao Hall was not a kingdom anyway.

[I am richer than any country.

I can use all the money on anything if I need to!

I have supreme dan beads. I will get all the money back by selling the dan beads! I can play this game day after day, none stop!

Only if you can also play that long!]

These were the words Feng Monarch didn't speak out!

Money was really powerful indeed!

It was nearly invincible to be the richest man!

When a man didn't have much money, he might be able to just keep himself well fed, but nothing more could he do with it. However, when he had a horrible amount of wealth, he could start a war with one thought, wave a disturbance with one hand, and control the rise and fall of the world!

One hundred taels of silver was not good enough to make people fight. However, a billion taels could easily buy one's life.

Money was all the same, only there were different numbers. Difference on amounts made huge impacts!

After a while, Ye Xiao finished lighting the incense. He was still solemn and serious. He stood up but didn't talk, and then he backed on the assassins and coldly said, "I think you should all go back now! Today, you are never going to kill me... Staying here wouldn't make any difference. It is only wasting your time."

At this moment, Boundless Saint smiled with a vicious voice. He blandly spoke, "Feng Monarch, we surely want to leave, but we are here with passions. It may be quite depressing to leave with failure. I think we need some comforts. At least you should tell us when Ling-Bao Hall will put on the rewards you just said? And what's the price? It is not a good idea to just tell us to leave with nothing but only depression!"

Ye Xiao blandly spoke, "I said it again and again. I understand your thoughts. I know what you are thinking right now, but we have just lost many people here. I don't have the mood to talk about other things. Let's just be merciful and let those men I want live for another day. By the afternoon tomorrow, the entire world will know the rewards we will put on! At that time, you will only need to bring me the heads and take the money."

He rolled his eyes, showed his killing intent, and spoke in a low voice, "The prices are not yet decided. However, I can guarantee you... No matter what level you are, two of the names on the list I will put on will bring you enough money to retire from the martial world and live a happy life! How about that? Is it a good promise to you now?"

[... Will bring you enough money to retire the martial world and live a happy life!]

It brightened all the assassins' eyes. Such a promise was more than enough for them.

"Fine. We will wait for your announcement in the afternoon tomorrow then!"

The Boundless Saint's black clothes was flying in the dark as his voice reverberated. A dark fog suddenly exploded in the sky, covering it in a dark fog all of sudden. The next moment, Boundless Saint and his golden label assassins rushed into that dark fog.

When the dark fog was gone, the six of them all disappeared.

They actually left first!

Ning Biluo stared at where they left, his eyes filled with killing intent. He obviously wanted to kill them. It wasn't a good time, but if it was, Ning Biluo would definitely chase up to them. Even if he couldn't wipe them out, he would try to kill one or two of them to vent the anger in his heart.

"Feng Monarch is playing a good game. Look how you turn things over. Impressive. I should better leave too." That big tough guy who had been fighting against Zhao Pingtian shouted and then flew up to the sky.

Zhao Pingtian shouted, "You want to leave? Not so easy! Leave your name!"

That big guy loudly laughed. "Zhao Pingtian, why do we have to know each other. We didn't know each other before this. After today, we may never have another chance to meet. It means nothing to leave my name!"

And then he disappeared in the sky. He looked no weaker than Boundless Saint at all.

Zhao Pingtian frowned.

[With such capability, he doesn't need to lie to me. He said we

didn't know each other, and we wouldn't meet again in the future. Then why was he here?]

[Most importantly, this man knows so much about my martial art! Whoever knows that much about me must be somebody who wants to fight me for a long time. But he said we would never meet again.]

It was suspicious, but Zhao Pingtian believed him. It was exactly like how he trusted Ye Xiao earlier. He just did, with no reason!

Ye Xiao looked at where that big guy left too. He solemnly spoke, "This man is probably from House of the Chaotic Storms... He knows you so well, not because he hates you... He did it for House of the Chaotic Storms."

What he said enlightened Ning Biluo and Zhao Pingtian. They started to understand the truth.

This man should be someone House of the Chaotic Storms sent out to specially deal with Zhao Pingtian.

It was like how Boundless Saint distracted Ning Biluo. He was trying to make Feng Monarch stand alone!

"However, things ended in a weird way!" Ye Xiao frowned and said, "The House of the Chaotic Storms worked so much to make this event. It shouldn't be this easy to solve. If it truly was solved this easy by me, the House of the Chaotic Storms really doesn't

deserve its big title then..."

He seemed to be humble, but he was just really confused.

In fact, he had been waiting for the next step his enemy would make. However, nothing happened after he made that swear. Things ended just like that, and the House of the Chaotic Storms didn't show up at all.

Even in the eyes of that big guy, Ye Xiao saw a sense of confusion.

Apparently, that big guy was also confused about how this thing ended tonight.

However, he was just a chessman in others' hands. He could only follow orders—he couldn't do anything else on his own!

...

Chapter 462: Money!

A Sky Origin Stage cultivator who was equally powerful as Zhao Pingtian in the fight was actually a chess piece that could only act on orders?

How powerful was the House of the Chaotic Storms really? How many forces did they have really?

No matter what, what he needed to do tonight was only to keep Zhao Pingtian away from Feng Monarch. Now, he had completed his mission.

"Where are the men from the five noble clans?" Ye Xiao asked with confusion.

"Feng Monarch is truly wise and smart. Only within a few talks, a huge crisis was gone. We are all impressed!"

It was Long Tianyun speaking.

He really meant every word he said though. It wasn't kissing ass.

What Feng Monarch did in this night was really impermeable and impressive. He truly had counted every reaction and possibility. He made a series of good steps till he finally fully controlled the entire situation.

He was really a great figure!

Ye Xiao frowned. "I am flattered."

Long Tianyun saw him and knew what he was thinking. He then explained, "We have been hiding aside as you told us to. However, Boss Wan has been worried that our appearance would draw the forces from those great sects and make things worse, so he didn't let us show up the whole time..."

Ye Xiao heard it and said, "I see."

He could accept such an explanation. Money could take care of those assassins because money was the biggest weak point of them. However, for the sects, money might not be that attractive. That was the difference between sects and assassins!

However, understanding was not all. What should be done needed to be done. He seriously said, "The crisis on Ling-Bao Hall is ended. However, on you, it hasn't started yet. Do not loosen yourselves. Master Long, you should keep it in mind."

Long Tianyun looked solemn as he said, "I do. We all do."

Ye Xiao nodded and said, "Good. Ning, Zhao Pingtian, Liu Changjun, you three take some men with you and go to the royal house... If there are still fights there, give them a hand. End this chaos as soon as possible."

"Yes."

"Monarch, there are Crown Prince's Palace, the departments, National Treasury... These places are all in attacks. Do we..." Wan Zhenghao reminded him.

Ye Xiao said, "Hmm. Ning, you go to the royal house. Zhao Pingtian to the National Treasury... Liu Changjun go to the House of Minister Zuo. Boundless Lake people are possibly settled there. Do not fight against them. And General Lan's place... The young lord is not there. There should be nothing happening in his house. Just send a man to check on it. Oh right, Prince Hua-Yang. Send some men to his palace too. Leave the other places alone. We don't have spare time for those trashy places..."

Crown Prince's Palace and other princes' places, Ye Xiao didn't care. In his heart, he wished them all dead. How would he even think about helping them?

He finally felt relieved now.

He seemed to control everything tonight, playing everybody around casually. However, no matter how great he looked like, only he knew how it felt inside his heart.

He was exhausted both mentally and physically.

It already wasn't an easy thing to hold himself up standing there now!

Chaos was everywhere in the city. Ye Xiao felt that there were limited things he could do about it. At this moment, he came up with an idea. [What if... I have great power in this country? ...]

And then he shook the head. He tried to forget this attractive but unpractical idea. He slowly sat down on a chair and rested to recover the qi inside him.

The assassins who stayed in Ling-Bao Hall started to do the clean up. In and out around Ling-Bao Hall, blood and corpses were everywhere. Bodies piled up like mountains while blood flowed like river. It smelled so bloody that it made people want to puke. It was truly like a hell with blood pond.

Morning fog gradually showed up, and the night was disappearing.

Long Tianyun quietly stood beside Ye Xiao for a while before asking, "Feng Monarch, I guess... You have figure out a way to solve this all?"

Ye Xiao didn't open his eyes. He blandly answered, "Half of it."

Long Tianyun was cautious. He said, "Not really. I think you have a method to solve it thoroughly."

Ye Xiao was surprised. "Oh? Why do you think so?"

He opened his eyes and looked at Long Tianyun.

Long Tianyun spoke solemnly and quietly, "Money!"

"Money?" Ye Xiao frowned and acted like he was thinking about it.

"Money can drive ghost, also gods." Long Tianyun said, "Money is something that great men don't care about but powerful for most men in this world... When it rises to a certain amount, it can also make chaotic storms."

"On this method, nobody is better than Feng Monarch!"

Long Tianyun looked at Ye Xiao's face as he cautiously spoke.

Ye Xiao nodded slowly to agree.

That was right.

Long Tianyun was right. Ye Xiao had thought about it.

Money!

When he came to Ling-Bao Hall at midnight, on the way, he came up with the same thought. The crisis was a serious one. All that had happened was for that great reward for his head! In other

words, it was money that created this situation!

Money was the most vulgar thing and it created a huge trouble on him!

However, his enemy had money, so did he! Ling-Bao Hall had been making money for thousands of years. It was rich enough to make the entire world envy. It was even wealthier than any of the three kingdoms in the world!

Even if the entire world worked together to defeat him on a money campaign, they would fail!

Since so, why let others use money to crash Ling-Bao Hall down?

If so, as Ling-Bao Hall was the richest in the world, wouldn't Ling-Bao Hall become a complete joke?

...

Chapter 463: Trouble Came Again!

Ye Xiao only trusted in true strength for all his life. As Long Tianyun said, money meant nothing to him. Most of the time, he didn't even think that money was a part of wealth at all.

The reason why when he was reborn, he had to try to get himself some money because he was so poor and had no knowledge about it!

In his eyes, wealth only meant materials, resources, dan beads and martial arts! These were wealth for cultivators.

He was living a second life, but he always treated money as he did in Qing-Yun Realm.

Obviously, he had been wrong all the time. Ridiculously wrong!

However, it was lucky to realize it now. As he finally realized it, his mind became broader. [In the world, money is much more powerful than I can imagine!]

"I will take good use of money from now on! It turns out that saying money doesn't mean everything is wrong. Money means everything, as long as there is enough amount of it!" Ye Xiao blandly spoke, "Especially for this... martial world."

He sat on the chair and thought for a while quietly. Suddenly, a sharp stream of saint light was shown from his eyes to Long

Tianyun.

Long Tianyun saw it; he smiled bitterly and nodded.

He heard it and he knew what change it would bring to this martial world.

As the richest man under this sky, once Feng Monarch realized the importance of money, it meant...

It would definitely change the world thoroughly!

Money could drive ghost, also gods. It could buy lives and change people's fate. What on earth couldn't he manage to do?

It wasn't just saying!

"Money is a good thing. However, life is also a good thing!" A clear loud voice sounded, and then dozens of figures flew into Ling-Bao Hall's yard like rainbow.

The one in front had long beard flying in the air. He was tall and standing straight up. He looked like a sage with warm eyes. He looked at Ye Xiao and Long Tianyun peacefully, smiling. "Supreme Dan is naturally good stuff. A bright future in the martial world is much more important than money. Don't you agree, Feng Monarch, Master Long?"

Long Tianyun's face changed.

Ye Xiao slowly looked up. He wasn't tired anymore as he sharply looked at these people. He half closed his eyes and said, "Sunlight Sect? Starlight Sect? The two great sects in Land of Han-Yang? So soon you came?"

The danger from those assassins had just vanished, and at the moment, Ye Xiao had just sent out the most powerful forces... The two great sects had been watching this all the time. They were the true threat to Ling-Bao Hall and the five noble clans really. They were the enemies that were most difficult to deal with. Right at this moment, they showed up surprisingly—they truly knew how to pick a perfect moment!

They just showed up and already blocked all the escape paths of Ling-Bao Hall.

Ling-Bao Hall had believed that they had controlled all assassins in the world and they had the power to write the history of this world. However, they were trapped in danger again. Things were even worse than before. They were like meat on the plate, waiting to be cut!

- Shoot, shoot, shoot. - People flew and stopped on every key spots on the roof. Blue lights shined everywhere with swords, and then they occupied the higher positions at once.

People of the five noble clans were scared.

The most dangerous moment had finally arrived.

In the sky.

Ling Wuxie clicked on his tongue. He was still watching it like it was a play. He held his arms and said, "This guy really have lots of troubles. One wave had just ended, yet another comes now. It is even worse this time. There are not more people than last time, but it is definitely tougher than the last group... What a trouble."

Wan of Clouds and Xiu of Heavens both felt solemn.

"Do we get down to end this drama right now?" Xiu-Er said.

"No hurry," Ling Wuxie blandly spoke, "you have been with your master for such a long time. You should have learned a lot. Remember one thing. You have to watch your friend or your enemy in a right way.

"To tell whether someone has potential, do not just watch him for a short time. Do not just see the moment when he is doing great. Those who are already powerful enough to challenge the heavens, to pick the moon by a hand, you don't need to observe them at all. They are already well-shaped. Nothing special can be found on them.

"When you observe a man, focus on his weak point. When he is under a negative situation, when he is much weaker than his opponent, how would he react? What would he do? How would

things end up with him? How would he turn the situation over and take a great counterattack... He may even completely turn over the situation and hold the war in his own hands and rule everything.

"Only at this point could a man to be seen how far he could develop."

Ling Wuxie blandly spoke, "For now, Feng Monarch is an example. Let's just see how he will deal with this first."

He rolled his wicked eyes and wildly spoke, "If we get into it early, what is left for us to watch? To say the least, if anything dangerous happens, with me here, what harm could be done even if the sky falls down on it?"

He reached a hand and said, "Chaos in the world is merely in my hand!"

Wan-Er and Xiu-Er looked at each other.

They didn't know how powerful Lord Ling Wuxie actually was. However, his capability of bragging was the top class among all the people they had seen for all those years. If his cultivation was as good as his capability of bragging, he must be telling the truth then...

[He truly is our master's old friend. Look how good he brags...]

The two ladies were quiet. Ling Wuxie thought that they must

have been shocked by his wonderful talk. He thought that he had given a brilliant talk just now, so he smiled and complacently said, "How is it? You understand now?"

And then he raised his head, looking so satisfied. He felt so good about it right now.

In front of two beautiful girls, he showed his best side to them... The most powerful, casual... handsome side. [Hahahaha...] Confidence exploded right inside his heart with vanity!

[I am so good!]

Chapter 464: Bu Jingtian!

"I see." Wan-Er and Xiu-Er both twitched their mouths. They thought, [Pah. Do we understand? This friend of our master, is he a fool?]

Ling Wuxie heard what they answered, so he became more arrogant. He laughed and reached out his hand, stretching it out and drawing it back like a chicken's claw shaking rapidly. He shook his as... hip and used the other hand to wave his hair—he was trying to make a handsome pose. Then, he put his hands on his back and, while standing facing the wind, blandly said, "Look."

His voice was deep and heavy, with the particularity of a real man.

However, Wan-Er and Xiu-Er had had a bad image of him, so they both felt speechless at the moment.

That was awkward.

The two ladies had the same feeling. [This guy is just like a male peacock. When he sees a female peacock, he cannot wait to shake his body. No matter what situation he is in, he just spreads his tail like he can show off the shiny part of himself...]

[Yet he never thinks that when he spreads the tail, he shows his ugly naked as... hip...]

Apparently, Ling Wuxie, Lord Ling, didn't realize what the two ladies truly felt. He stood there facing the wind feeling good about it. He even thought that the wind was too small, so he secretly operated some art to draw over a bigger one.

Wind heavily blew, and Lord Ling's hair fluttered in the air with his clothes. He looked just like an immortal.

His eyes were tough and profound, and his face looked good with perfect shape...

He was truly... an outstanding young man with a handsome appearance, wisdom and courage!

[Look at my eyes of deep thoughts!]

Apparently, it wasn't his first time to play such scene. That was so skillful and experienced. He barely did anything serious, yet he had created a image of a great superior cultivator on himself.

No one could do that without thousands of times practice!

However, that showed how exactly he was behaving like a naive stupid boy. It was too obvious that he couldn't cover it.

Wan-Er and Xiu-Er rolled up their eyes. They both noticed how speechless and helpless they were in each others' eyes. [How does master... have such a friend... That is not fair. That is not reasonable...]

[No wonder this guy always gets beaten up out there.]

[It would be justice to beat him into death. There's not a reasonable thing not to beat him...]

[If I can beat him, I will do it eight times a day... That is a minimum number...]

...

Back to the other side.

Ye Xiao casually sat on the chair, even though strong enemies were in front of him now. He looked at the two group of people and blandly said, "Great sects, I apologize that I haven't greeted you at the door. I wonder what you seek for in my small Ling-Bao Hall? Things are complicated these days. I am afraid we might not be able to serve you well!"

The old man of Sunlight Sect smiled and said, "Feng Monarch is the true good monarch of Ling-Bao Hall. Just a few words, you solved the crisis and cleared up all those good assassins. They even became your support. How admirable. We came here to see you in person. To be greeted by you yourself, it would be worth everything we have been through to come. What to apologize for? Feng Monarch, don't be too kind."

"However..." He changed the topic now and spoke in a low voice,

"Feng Monarch's money scheme works well on those assassins, but not so well on us. Don't you think so?"

Ye Xiao showed him a dark face and indifferently spoke, "I said, things are complicated for us at the moment. I have been busy for a whole day. Please just say what you want to say. I am tired, and I need rest now. I don't want to waste more time here."

The two best sects in Land of Hang-Yang was pushing him, and danger was getting closer. Ye Xiao still could talk so casually and without showing any respect. In his voice, he showed his impatience.

He sounded completely arrogant!

The old man's face who just talked turned dark. He really felt angry about Ye Xiao's impolite words and arrogant attitude. His eyes were filled with sharp glow as he coldly stared at Feng Monarch's face without saying a word.

All the superior cultivators in the two great sects all became weird on their faces. They felt sorry; they showed taunt, sneer... They felt it all!

They looked at Ye Xiao as if they saw a crazy fool who didn't realize how bad the situation was for him.

After a while, as the old man's eyes shined with killing intent, he slowly spoke, "Feng Monarch, you may not know who I am... Heh,

heh. I am Bu Jingtian!"

Bu Jingtian!

The name reverberated, and it was like a bomb exploding in Ling-Bao Hall from the sky!

The men of the five clans exclaimed at the same time. Their faces suddenly turned pale, like white paper.

They all looked at this old man with both respect and fear.

Bu Jingtian!

The name seemed to contain magical force.

It scared people and made people tremble!

That was reasonable. After all, this man was known as the No. 1 Cultivator in the world!

Bu Jingtian was the name of the man who was known as the scariest man in the Land of Han-Yang!

Cloud Clashing Hand, Bu Jingtian!

About one thousand and one hundred years before that, this

name began to shock the entire land. Bu Jingtian was third level of Sky Origin Stage. He fought against another guy, who was level six of Sky Origin Stage, however, within ten moves, he killed that guy!

That was the first story that made him a legend!

About one hundred years after that, there was a sect called Black Dragon. It had men all over the world, the most powerful sect at that time. However, because of a fight for some money, they beat Bu Jingtian's families up.

When Bu Jingtian learned of it, he went to Black Dragon with one sword. Black Dragon thought that they were much more powerful, so they didn't show him any respect. They actually shouted at him with filthy words, but Bu Jingtian started to rush and kill from the gate to seventy miles distance!

Dead bodies of people in Black Dragon were all lying after him.

The blood floated down to the bottom of the mountain for over a dozen miles. Dead bodies covered the road to the door of Black Dragon's main hall.

Bu Jingtian didn't stop. He kept rushing and killing into the hall.

After one full day, he left the base hall of Black Dragon with blood all over his clothes.

A few days after that, someone sneaked into the place because of

curiosity. He was scared so badly that he went mad! There was no living man in Black Dragon's main hall anymore.

Forty thousand men died.

Bu Jingtian created it within two bright days and a dark night!

That was the second story of the legend!

After that, he was named the No. 1 Slaughterer in the Land of Han-Yang!

Chapter 465: No. 1 Cultivator!

About nine hundred years earlier, there had been six sects in the Land of Han-Yang that were the most powerful sects. Although Sunlight Sect and Starlight Sect were the most powerful ones, the other four sects were only a little bit weaker. The six sects were all in the same league. A disciple from one of these six sects accidentally killed Bu Jingtian's son. Bu Jingtian was enraged and went straight to the sect. The fight lasted three months, and fresh blood flowed like rivers—he actually wiped out the entire sect with one sword!

After that, he rested for three years to recover himself. It was said that he was wounded so badly that it was nearly impossible to heal.

That was reasonable. One man fighting alone against an entire powerful sect and wiping them out. It was reasonable that he could get himself seriously injured. However... although he won the fight and wrote a legend of his own, was it worth?

Because of this, another two sects knew that an opportunity had come. Bu Jingtian, Sunlight Sect's strongest man was gone. It was a godsent opportunity to destroy Sunlight Sect. Five years after, the two sects attacked Sunlight Sect. When the fight was turning most dangerous for Sunlight Sect, Bu Jingtian showed up. With one sword, he fought and fought. He was invincible as he changed the situation alone.

The two sects were almost done in, and they started to retreat. Bu Jingtian, however, didn't let them go. He hunted them a thousand

miles, and this fight was full of blood. The next five years after that, Bu Jingtian took revenge on them from time to time, until the two sects both disappeared!

Four hundred years later, a talented cultivator showed up from nowhere. He was from one of the other four sects than Sunlight Sect and Starlight Sect. He had great talents in martial arts, and nobody could defeat him in the entire martial world. He extremely disdained Bu Jingtian's title as the No. 1 cultivator, so he had challenged him many times.

Bu Jingtian was completely indifferent though.

However, this man stayed in front of Sunlight Sect's gate. Anybody of Sunlight Sect who came out, he killed them...

Finally, Bu Jingtian came out. He swayed his sword once—only once. He cut off this man's head. He went a long way with that man's head stabbed in his sword, to the sect that man was from! He rushed and slaughtered!

Within one day, this sect was destroyed too!

After that, only two great sects were left in the world.

Sunlight Sect.

Starlight Sect.

Till then, legend was no more a legend. Bu Jingtian was no more writing a legend. He was creating a myth! A myth of a god killer!

Bu Jingtian never showed mercy to an enemy. Besides, he believed one thing. When he cut the weeds, he had to dig up the roots too!

No matter who had offended him, they all died. Even their relaxants died! Nobody survived!

Bu Jingtian's name was so horrible that in Land of Hang-Yang, even kids didn't dare to mention it.

He was known as the world's No. 1 Cultivator! The most cold-blooded butcher!

His name was a myth in Land of Han-Yang, also a taboo!

Now, this old man in front of Ye Xiao was exactly this horrible man.

At the moment, would the legend continue?

Before Bu Jingtian arrived, Sunlight Sect and Starlight Sect were separated. None of them liked each other.

However, since Bu Jingtian showed up, the two great sects were

bonded together.

Sunlight Sect and Starlight Sect were both subsections of the great sects in Qing-Yun Realm. They had the same position in this world, and they both knew it. Most of the times, they acted in the same pace. Either of them would act overwhelming to the other!

However, when Bu Jingtian was here, things were different!

Everybody listened to Bu Jingtian!

In fact, no matter who, no matter how complicated the relations were, as long as Bu Jingtian was there, he was the one who gave orders!

Nobody could take over his position!

Sunlight Sect realized they were still too weak to handle the situation as they had been defeated in the fight against Boundless Lake. They knew that things were getting serious, so they asked Bu Jingtian to show up and take up the leader's position!

Who dared to take the highest seat when this slaughterer was there?

When people from the five clans heard that it was him, they all showed a grey face.

Bu Jingtian's presence showed Sunlight Sect's attitude. They would never negotiate about this situation!

If the men from the five clans still held a tough attitude on this, they might need to worry about their lives seriously. Bu jingtian could wipe their entire clans up within one night!

[Take it or not? You want to rise? You want to keep the supreme dan beads? Fine! I will kill you all with all the people in your clan!

Let's see whom you will give those dan beads to!

Genius?

No matter how talented a genius is, he will become a dead body under my sword!]

This world's No. 1 Cultivator, No. 1 Slaughterer, the legend of the Land of Han-Yang, said his name in front Feng Monarch Feng of Ling-Bao Hall.

It was obvious that he was trying to make a clear attitude.

"Bu Jingtian? Never heard of it." Ye Xiao shook the head. He looked tired. "Hmm. Now I know your name. You are Bu Jingtian... But can you just tell me what do you want here? I am really tired. I don't have much time to play games with you. Please just be frank, could you?"

"Like, what do you want to talk to me, my friend?"

It looked like he had just heard a normal name. He wasn't surprised or shocked at all, since he had truly never heard about the story about Bu Jingtian.

What he said was "my friend", not "my friends". He was especially talking to Bu Jingtian, and there seemed to be a hidden meaning behind it.

[I am tired. I said it twice.]

Bu Jingtian was a bit shocked. The next moment, fire of anger flamed up on his face.

He thought that once he said his name, these young men would have been scared the hell out and cried to apologize, to the point that they would even get down on their knees to beg for forgiveness. He thought that they might at least say something to praise him...

It was possible that they would faint because of fear...

Bu Jingtian had seen a lot in his life after all.

He had gotten used to it anyway.

Besides, he enjoyed it.

When people do that to him, he felt good.

He thought he could experience this wonderful feeling on this young man, but he was wrong... The young man showed nothing when he heard his name, like he never knew who he was. Feng Monarch was actually still showing an indifferent face!

This moment, Bu Jingtian felt like being thrown a damp over when he expected to feel happy. He was not in the mood anymore!

"Young man, haven't you heard my name before?" Bu Jingtian frowned, trying to press down the anger in his heart.

[Maybe he heard never has about my story... That is possible.]

Ignorant man always make mistakes. It didn't feel good, but it was forgivable!

"Should I? Bu Jingtian is not just a name? Is it a famous one?" Ye Xiao impatiently said, "I think you are making a mistake to focus on this petty thing? Man in martial world should never think too much about himself. Don't you think so?"

Ye Xiao stopped thinking about it now. When he said this, he already negated most of his assumptions!

He knew it was unnecessary now!

Chapter 466: How Dare You!

"I guess you really haven't heard about my name? A man in the martial world who has never heard about my name..." Bu Jingtian's face was turning pale.

Everybody knew that when his face turned pale, he was preparing to kill.

"Should I?" Ye Xiao sneered. "Why should I have heard about you? Is Bu Jingtian a famous name? Is it worth my attention?"

"Feng Monarch!" Long Tianyun tried to warn him in a hurry. He spoke in a low voice, "This is... the No. 1 Cultivator in Sunlight Sect. He is well known as the world's strongest... He is Bu Jingtian! Bu Jingtian..."

Long Tianyun was nearly scared the sh*t out of himself...

[My holy god. Do you know who you are humiliating...]

[My god! if you don't shut up now, we are going to die.]

[No. Not only are we all going to die, all people in our clans will die!]

Ye Xiao showed a sneer.

[Well known as the strongest, No. 1 cultivator in the world?]

[In Land of Han-Yang?]

[How... impressive!]

In Xiao Monarch's eyes, there was no superior cultivator in Land of Han-Yang at all. Even if he really was the No. 1 Cultivator in Land of Han-Yang, he was nothing but an ant that was easy to kill in Xiao Monarch's eyes!

[You actually want me to be shocked by just your name...]

[Besides, Land of Han-Yang is a deep pond. There are Wan of the Clouds and Xiu of the Heavens, two super powerful ladies, also my father and Bing Xinyue who are two great cultivators. A few days later, when Uncle Song recovers his true power, he is very likely beyond Sky Origin Stage. What on earth do you think can make you No. 1 in this world!]

[I truly have no idea what you can be proud of!]

"I see. A famous man you are. I thought it is just somebody's name. Admirable." Ye Xiao looked up at Bu Jingtian. "However, Bu Jingtian, what on earth do you want? I told you several times that I am truly very tired. Let's cut the b*llshit and go straight to the point. I can't hold it anymore!"

Bu Jingtian was shocked speechless. Suddenly, he smiled in a

weird way. In his eyes, there was killing intent as he nodded. "Kid, you are good. You are very good! You really are good."

Ye Xiao blandly smiled. "Accepted! I know I am good, otherwise, you wouldn't praise me so many times. However, let's stick to the business at. Your praise made me feel better indeed, but I am exhausted. I really don't have time for you."

'Tired. Don't have time for you.'

Ye Xiao said it four times already now!

He was looking at Bu Jingtian.

[If he isn't a stupid prick, he should... know what to do?]

However, Bu Jingtian didn't understand what it meant. Maybe he did, but he just ignored it.

He was so angry and he actually laughed. His eyes were filled with killing intent. He lowered his voice, "I thought Feng Monarch was a heroic figure, someone who could make chaos and also solve the chaos with decisive mind and sharp moves. I was wrong. I am disappointed to see you in person. To see is better than to hear. You are just normal! Feng Monarch is a man without respect. Such man is useless in the world, only a waste of food. I don't see we should cooperate with you. Why not just let me send you down to hell today. You are tired. You want rest. When you die, you can rest as long as you want."

He slowly raised his hand and reached to sword on his waist.

His hand slowly moved, but it made an image of countless hands moving in people's eyes. In the same moment, those hands kept moving to the sword like a dragon...

Ye Xiao coldly laughed and made his decision too. He didn't move; instead, he just blandly said, "Send me down? When I die? With your cracked old body? You don't want your tongue to be blown off by the wind, do you?"

He raised his head up and looked into Bu Jingtian's eyes. Those were two streams of sharp lights. Just like that, it was direct and bold, like nothing was dangerous to him. In his eyes, there was even disdain. "Hearing such foolish talk, I now know you are good too. You are really good!"

Bu Jingtian's face twitched. "Are you mocking me?"

"It is a commendation. You are good." Ye Xiao sneered. "Because you actually could ignore the fact that your body is a cracked body that may only be able to live for three months! With this, you actually dared to want to kill somebody. Most importantly, you want to kill me!"

His eyes turned colder as he blandly shouted, "Bu Jingtian, how dare you!"

Bu Jingtian stopped moving all of a sudden.

They looked into each other's eyes.

In Bu Jingtian's eyes, instead of killing intent, a sense of fear and unwillingness suddenly appeared.

Ye Xiao's eyes were filled with sharpness like sword and coldness like ice, with a sense of disdainfulness and pride!

"Do you dare to kill me?" Ye Xiao asked with an attitude from higher to lower, coldly and peacefully.

Ye Xiao's pride of being a monarch was showed completely when he faced this No. 1 Cultivator!

At this moment, in his eyes, there was only the power to rule!

What he said was like a sharp needle stabbing into Bu Jingtian's heart!

[I don't dare to kill you?

Why don't I?]

His first thought was not to think about anything else but only to break Feng Monarch's neck!

In fact, he didn't dare to.

He didn't have the courage to do it at all!

That man was someone even he couldn't touch recklessly!

Bu Jingtian came out from seclusion this time. He didn't inform anybody. Even masters in Sunlight Sect didn't understand why he would actually agree to come out for this.

Normally, although things in Chen-Xing City didn't go well on their side, it wasn't bad enough to make Bu Jingtian, such a powerful figure, to come out. He was a key figure of Sunlight Sect after all.

Besides, it was the House of the Chaotic Storms who made this event. Bu Jingtian was, although No. 1 Cultivator in the world, only limited in this land. If he had to fight against the House of the Chaotic Storms, either one of Wan and Xiu, he would be destroyed immediately.

Sunlight Sect couldn't take that risk.

Chapter 467: Death Knocking on the Door!

Even though he was No. 1 in Land of Han-Yang, in Qing-Yun Realm, he should be no higher than second league in the world. He wasn't really any big figure at all. It was a such a cruel and humiliating conclusion, but it was the truth!

However, although Bu Jingtian was nothing in Qin-Yun Realm, he was still the key pillar of Sunlight Sect in Land of Han-Yang! They would never let him fall!

Letting him come was worse than preventing him!

It was too dangerous.

They took such big a risk.

However, Bu Jingtian actually showed up and asked to come to Chen-Xing City.

The reason was simple. He knew exactly what was going on with himself.

He was about to die soon.

A long time before that, he had been hiding in seclusion. He had reached the cultivation limit in this realm for a long time, and he wanted to break through the limit and rush up to Qing-Yun Realm

so as to extend his life.

However, hundreds of years in seclusion didn't help him. He was now dying.

In cultivation capability, he had actually gone beyond the limit. With no reason, he couldn't take the last step to get up to Qing-Yun Realm.

Hmm. It was not that he couldn't. In fact, he did. He didn't know why he was kicked down back. Since that accident, his soul was seriously damaged. He kept himself breathing till now, but it was going to the end.

In seclusion, he tried to recover himself to almost normal status. However, he only had three months left to live.

Under such a situation, how would he not be in a hurry to break through the limit and extend his life now.

He heard that there was a guy in Chen-Xing City who could make supreme dan beads. That was a shocking news to him.

He didn't wait even a second. He just came all the way along fast.

Even though he knew that he might encounter people of the House of the Chaotic Storms, he didn't care anymore. If he had to die fighting against them, it was only to die three months earlier. If things went well, he could get some supreme dan beads that could

make him live longer!

Since Feng Monarch could make supreme dan beads, he could certainly make dan beads that could extend his life!

There was hope in front of him, so why would he give it up?

That was his last opportunity.

That was his thought.

This time, he was not here to snatch the dan beads in the five clans' hands. He was aiming at the man who made these dan beads, Feng Zhiling!

He thought that nobody knew he was dying, so he just wanted to frighten them and force Feng Zhiling. He wanted to recruit Feng Zhiling to make dan beads for him. It could help himself, and also help his sect, the Sunlight Sect.

After all, he was the No. 1 Cultivator, No. 1 Slaughterer.

The legend and his title was powerful enough in this world!

Not to mention only to threaten a dan-maker, even to threaten a king of any of the three kingdoms, he was powerful enough!

However, unexpectedly, things went completely different than what he had planned when he arrived!

This Feng Monarch didn't fear any threatened at all. He was proud and arrogant as if he was living beyond the clouds. He also had a bad temper that was tough and stinky!

His eyes were so sharp that he actually saw the true status of Bu Jingtian!

[How is it possible?]

"Feng Monarch, be careful when you talk!" Bu Jingtian's face turned dark and his eyes were full of suppression.

He was surprised about Feng Zhiling's sharp eyes. He still couldn't believe that Feng Zhiling really could see through him and clearly know about the status of his body condition!

"Bu Jingtian, right? I mean, your forehead is dark, and your skin is wrinkled. Your pupils seem dispersive, and your temples are extremely swollen. When you talk, it sounded strong and full of killing intent. However, no matter what, I can hear stops in your voice...."

Ye Xiao indifferently looked at Bu Jingtian. He said over a dozen negative symptoms on Bu Jingtian, causing the latter's face to turn uglier with each of his words. Bu Jingtian was more and more astonished.

"The symptoms on your forehead, pupils, mouth... You can cover them by your martial art. A man with normal eyes could never see it. However, the swollen temples showed that you are close to the limitation of this world. When you talk, you stopped sometimes. It showed that your Jing and Mai are nearly broken."

"You are well cultivated. You are already in such a high level that you don't need to do anything to absorb the qi in the world. However, at this moment, every breath of spiritual qi will give pressure on your breaking Jing and Mai. If you do it with a tiny mistake, your Jing and Mai would be destroyed, and you will die for it."

"You are indeed qualified enough to be the No. 1 Cultivator in the world. That is what makes your Jing and Mai overloaded! If you can't upgrade yourself to Spirit Origin Stage within three months, you will die. With your current status, you surely are able to fight against me. But I am sure after you kill who you want to kill, you will die and leave a departed body. You will die with the man you kill. I think you already know it, don't you?"

"Other than that, I will tell you something you don't know. When you die, never be around people you care about, or places you care about. When you die, if you are inside Sunlight Sect, it will be destroyed with you! Because your death will release the qi that you have forcibly held inside your body and it will cause a huge explosion! The power of that qi explosion will be times powerful than your best hit. I believe it will be enough to destroy the entire territory of your Sunlight Sect!"

He peacefully looked at Bu Jingtian. "I guess the reason why you showed up here at this moment is to firstly find somebody who can save you; secondly, you don't want to destroy your sect when you die. Three months is a rough guess after all. Maybe you will die just a moment later!"

He confidently added some words, "Bu Jingtian, I am telling you the truth. In this world, there is only one man who can save your pathetic life! That is me!"

Chapter 468: They Are Enemies!

"If I don't help you, no matter who you are, you will definitely die. You know this, yet still didn't ask me nicely, or beg me to save your life. You actually dared to threaten me? How dare you!"

Bu Jingtian's eyes shot out cold lights; he blandly spoke, "You said you can save me?"

Ye Xiao didn't answer it directly. "With my capability of dan-making, if I cannot save you, do you think there is anybody in the world who can save you? Don't get overjoy yet. I don't think you should give much hope on it, considering what attitude you just showed to me!"

Bu Jingtian burst with anger!

He was indeed about to reach the end of his life. As Ye Xiao said, he might die at any second. However, it didn't mean he should be humiliated! Especially when he had been the No. 1 Cultivator title in the world for so many years. He couldn't allow anybody to befool his title.

With a dark face, he said in a low voice, "Feng Monarch has good eyes. I don't have a long time to live now, but I don't think I should stand the humiliation from a young man! I don't need to beg for life! Feng Monarch, you are challenging my tolerance. I have lived such a long time. I think it should be fun to have a master dan-maker to die with me!"

Ye Xiao coldly laughed, then he said, "Die with you? Fun? You want me to die with you? Fine. You said you are a legend in this world, right? Before you die, why don't you put another chapter in your story. Make a final chapter to this legendary story. A talented master dan-maker died together with you. That would not only add a chapter to the legend, it is also a new myth!"

Bu Jingtian hesitated.

He had killed a lot in his life; certainly, he was a cruel person. He walked alone and acted alone, and not once did he fear anything.

He didn't put conscience or morality in his heart. He just did whatever he wanted to do.

For him, dignity was important, but life was even more important.

After all, losing his life meant losing everything.

That was the experience of over a thousand years living.

Now he was pissed by Ye Xiao. He was furious and enraged, but he just couldn't make up his mind to make an attack!

He was so angry that his belly heaved. Vicious lights came out from his eyes, but at the moment, he just couldn't really do anything.

He was the No. 1 Cultivator in the world, so what? When his weak point was held by others, being No. 1 Cultivator still couldn't do anything!

Sometimes, it was much easier to talk than to do...

Ye Xiao looked at this No. 1 Cultivator and sighed.

[I guess my plan about recruiting a new fellow is bound to fail...]

[This guy is completely different from Ning Biluo, Zhao Pingtian, or Wan Zhenghao. I don't think I should do anything for him!]

[The title of the world's No. 1?]

[Well, whatever.]

It was stiff. Ye Xiao held his arms on the chest, looking at this No. 1 in the world casually. He was showing a face of indifference and arrogance.

However, Bu Jingtian didn't dare to do anything to him. He just gasped, doing nothing.

Cultivators behind Bu Jingtian from the two great sects all showed some not-so-well-looking faces.

They looked at each other with complicated expressions.

[What the hell... is this? Aren't we here to revenge? Why are we sticking here? What next?]

[And... Bu Jingtian's condition, what Feng Monarch said, is it true?]

"What does that guy want? What on earth is going on?" Xiu of the Heavens watched it from the sky in confusion. "Those men are so powerful, and they are here to make troubles. He actually talked so much and made them embarrassed... He doesn't even have the power to defend from those guys... He is courting death!"

Ling Wuxie smiled. "That is what I said. Girls have long hairs and short sights. What a good saying from ancient men. Well said. Well said."

Wan-Er and Xiu-Er were both pissed. Their eyes were filled with cold lights. They were angry about that "long hairs and short sights" saying, however, they suppressed down the anger.

[This man is master's friend. If we get on him, it will only embarrass master. Even not to consider this, although he is a fool, he truly is powerful in cultivation. We cannot afford messing with him.] They knew it well, so they suppressed down the anger. They just rolled their eyeballs. That was all.

If rolling eyeballs could hurt people, Ling Wuxie should have been smashed into pile of meat.

Ling Wuxie raised the eyebrows. "This Feng Monarch is really a wise man. Even though he is in a negative position, he can still see through the enemy's weak point. With just a few words, he made his enemy hesitate and the enemy doesn't dare to do anything. That so called No. 1 Cultivator... Cough, cough..."

When speaking of No.1 Cultivator, his face looked complicated.

He couldn't believe that such a man, whom he could kill with just a blow of wind, was actually the No. 1 Cultivator in this realm, a legend, a myth... Since was it so easy to be a legend now...

When he spoke of No. 1 Cultivator, he felt shamed. He felt like he was obviously lying.

"That... Cough, cough... superior cultivator... When he came, Feng Monarch had seen through him. He knew that old man couldn't live long. He could help the old man to live longer though. That is why he can again control of the worst situation in his own hands. He even wants to recruit that old man... What he wants to do is to defeat that old man thoroughly and then save him."

"To put him down and then save him, if he does it well, or if this Bu Jingtian is a good man, they can become friends other than enemies with just a few soft words. After that, one will have a strong assistant while the other will have a powerful support. Surely, Bu Jingtian could escape death and live longer."

"That is the beautiful plan of Feng Monarch. All in all, it is a both a good solution. It won't only benefit either of them."

"However, surprisingly, he was facing a complete cruel prick. That old man is not even close to a nice man. He fears death so much but likes to bully weak people."

"When Feng Monarch learned what kind of a man he is, Feng Monarch lost his patience. He didn't even need to hesitate. Now he is apparently thinking about how to kill that No. 1 Cultivator! You don't believe me, then you should just watch and see. Lets see how this No. 1 Cultivator dies in Feng Monarch's hand. That should be some weird stuff!"

Chapter 469: They Are Enemies!

Ling Wuxie smiled with half closed eyes.

"Maybe things are exactly like what you said. Everybody can see it. Bu Jingtian means nothing in our eyes, but he is so much stronger than Feng Zhiling. He may be near death, but he still has power to attack. I guess he will only need to use two fingers to kill Feng Zhiling! There is such a distance between their cultivation capabilities. How could Feng Zhiling, the weaker one, kill Bu Jingtian, the much stronger one?" Xiu of the Heavens asked. She didn't accept Ling Wuxie's opinion.

"The most interesting part of observing a person is right here. The unknown part is the most attractive part." Ling Wuxie said, "The strong smashes down the weak. That would be boring. To see how far a man could go, we need to see how he handle a bad situation. I said it already. In fact, I don't know how Feng Monarch will kill this Bu Jingtian. That is why I am so interested."

"However, if he can kill Bu Jingtian, when this Feng Monarch stands right in front of me... I am not sure I will know what to do."

He said, "Because if he really does it, such figure, I should either kill him right now, or just give up the thought about killing him and to make friends with him. It is never a bad thing to have such a friend. It is a lucky thing."

"My position and my cultivation, if I want to kill him just because I am afraid, it will only plant a seed of discord in my heart. It costs

more than what I can earn. More importantly, after that, I will have a thought in my heart that I will never get over him. He will become a nightmare to me."

"It is not a good plan to kill him. However, when such man grows to the day when he can have an even fight against me... It will become difficult to become his friend."

"I admire him, but if I need to go down and make friend with someone in the mortal world, I really don't like it..."

"Am I making it nonsense? I am ambivalent really! However... that is what this Feng Zhiling brings to me. Besides, I can feel that he and your master are bound to be... enemies!"

"If he cannot break up to higher realm, that is fine. If he reached our realm, it may bring your master a serious headache."

"They are absolutely two persons that are impossible to be together."

Ling Wuxie's eyes were filled with some purple lights. He stared at Ye Xiao with that beautiful eyes as he added, "My Universal Eyes. I can see through everybody, except a few true legends in the universe. Other than the Four Dominators and Eight Supremes, there is only one man I can't see through. That is your master, Bai Chen."

"Bai Chen is truly an outlier of all kinds in the world. I don't

think it is a problem not to see through your master anyway. He is also a legend after all. However, now, there is another one, Feng Monarch."

"Legend. That Bu Jingtian is also a legend. He is the ultimate legend of Land of Han-Yang. Do you see clearly through him?" Xiu of the Heavens knew that Ling Wuxie was not some normal figure. He was a cultivator as strong as her master, but she just kept teasing him.

"Stop it, Xiu-Er. What Lord Ling said are all brilliant words. The legends he mentioned are those we shouldn't directly call their names. How could you compare that trash down there to these great figure. If master knows, he will definitely punish you!" Wan of the Clouds scolded.

Xiu of Heavens knew that she was wrong. She just stucked her tongue out and stopped talking!

Ling Wuxie blandly spoke, "I don't know if there are others. If they are the only two in the world, they are bound to be enemies!"

"Competitors in fate!"

"Bai Chen has improved to a level that I can not even see. This Feng Monarch, I can still see him. So... I need to watch him for some days. I need to estimate this guy carefully. If I am right and I watch the rise of a legend, it will be my best luck!"

Wan-Er and Xiu-Er were both shocked.

They also thought highly of Feng Zhiling, however, he was in a low realm after all. Even though he had potential, he didn't have a lot. As such, they didn't really put him in mind.

Now they heard what Lord Ling said, they felt that he wasn't as simple as they thought.

"The day when Lord Ling was bullied by Meng Wuzhen, you felt helpless, so you came to our master for help. The reason is that you could see through Meng Wuzhen, but couldn't see through my master with your Universal Eyes? So you think if our master fights against Meng Wuzhen, he will win?" Xiu of the Heavens asked.

Ling Wuxie was angry. "What do you mean I was bullied by Meng Wuzhen? How could you talk with such a big mouth? Don't you think before you talk... Who could possibly really bully me, Ling Wuxie, in this universe?"

He said, "Pah. I was careless. That is all. I got beaten up accidentally. That is it..."

The two ladies twitched their mouths.

"Heh, heh. When you see yourself in the mirror... Can you see through yourself with your Universal Eyes?" Xiu of the Heavens teased Ling Wuxie. In fact, she was thinking another thing. [Ling Wuxie's eyes can see through everybody except those in dominant

levels and Master Bai and Feng Monarch!]

[What is it? How does it work?]

[Would this Feng Monarch be Master's opponent in fate?]

[Opponent?]

They were having the same thought. Xiu of the Heavens was thinking exactly what Wan of the Clouds thought. They were both lost in thoughts!

Looking at the ladies, Ling Wuxie knew that they realized something. His angry face turned peaceful and he peacefully said, "Nobody could kill such a man! Even if I try to do it now, he may still survive... Do not even think about those small plans in your heads now."

"Why not? He is weak. If I am unrestrained, I can blow him to death easily!"

Xiu of the Heavens didn't agree.

Ling Wuxie smiled blandly and didn't talk. He didn't explain anything at all.

The ladies were not well informed enough to understand the reason yet.

Chapter 470: A Palm Hit Promise

Ling Wuxie thought, [If this man can be killed, your master should have killed him a very long time ago! Why would he wait till now?]

[Bai Chen is not a fool...]

[If this guy can be killed, it means your master can be killed too. Compared to Feng Monarch, your master have more horrible enemies. If you can realize this, you will pray to the gods to keep Feng Zhiling alive!]

...

Down on the floor, Bu Jingtian was watched by weird looks from cultivators of the two great sects, causing his rage to surge up. The anger inside his heart was becoming harder and harder to suppress.

Feng Monarch really didn't show him any respect, so his hands were now itching to kill him. If he didn't need the supreme dan beads, he would have killed Feng Monarch into pieces really.

He stared at Ye Xiao, and suddenly, he was enlightened. He really thought of a way to do it. He blandly said, "Feng Monarch, at the moment, there are enemies all around you. You care a lot about your men. When you reversed the situation earlier, you get those who murdered your men killed right away. That showed everything. Am I right about it?"

Ye Xiao's eyes were full of cold lights. "So what? What do you want to say?"

Bu Jingtian casually spoke, "I don't deny that I don't have much time to live. I don't deny that you have the capability to make supreme dan beads... I don't deny that you are the only one who can make it!"

"In other words, you are my only hope here, Feng Monarch. It seems I can only accept to be your puppet. After all, you are holding my weak point. Feng Monarch, you care too much about something..."

Bu Jingtian looked casual and happy all of a sudden.

However, at the same time, Ye Xiao was becoming serious. "What do you want to do, sir. Just say it. Why are you trying to be mysterious."

Bu Jingtian casually said, "Feng Monarch, I will never kill you. You are my only hope! However, I can kill everybody that is important to you! They mean something to you, but they mean nothing to me! Why can't I kill somebody I don't care about!"

"I will kill them one by one! I would love to see how long can you stand watching them die. I wonder how many people should I kill before you change your mind and your attitude to me! I look forward to it!"

His eyes were filled with killing intent again. He raised his head up and looked at those assassins behind Ye Xiao, including Wan Zhenghao.

He was making a clear point.

[I won't beg you!

I have my dignity!

But you still have to help me. If you don't, I will kill your people! If you don't give up when I kill one of them, I will kill two. I will keep killing them one by one until you give in!]

That was typically a threat. It was direct coercion!

[I will make you beg me to accept your help!]

Ye Xiao's face finally changed. It didn't look good. He quietly looked at Bu Jingtian, and after a while, he spoke, "Are you sure? Are you sure you want to do that?"

Bu Jingtian viciously smiled. "You have a pair of sharp eyes. You can see my weak point. That is your advantage. However, you are too arrogant. You showed your weak point to me. You make me see it. If I don't make use of it, it will only feed your arrogance. Who am I? I am No. 1 in the world. How dare you show off your childish

scheme in front of me! Today, I will let you know that a legend is not so easy to break!"

Ye Xiao nodded and took in a deep breath. He said, "To be honest, I really don't want to help you. You are so contemptible... However, you do catch on my weak point... I was hesitating about fighting against you in a tough way, however, you are No. 1 in the world, a legend in Land of Han-Yang... Fine. I will accept it!"

He sighed. He looked so upset, like there was nothing he could do anymore.

Bu Jingtian blandly smiled. "A wise man submits to fate!"

Ye Xiao humphed and then thought for a while. He said, "Bu Jingtian, I feel so bad to be threatened by you like this. Since you say you are the No. 1 in the world, you should be invincible. How about this. If you can survive one palm hit from me, and you promise you won't hurt my men, I will make ten Life Extending Dan beads! That will be enough to extend your life for three hundred years. How about that?"

People who heard it all showed a complex expression on the face. When they looked at Feng Monarch, it was weird.

[What was that? You are no higher than level 3 of Sky Origin Stage. You are in the bottom group among all the people in this place at the moment. Bu Jingtian is over level 9 of Sky Origin Stage, the limit of Land of Han-Yang. It is such a huge gap. Not to mention one palm hit... Even a hundred palm hits, even if you can

use your sword to attack, you will never kill him!]

[Listen to him. He meant something in the last few words of his. He just wants a way out of that embarrassment. He wants to keep his men safe, so he gave in. However, why does he still want to keep that fake honor since he had decided to give up? He actually came up with such a foolish idea to give himself a way out...]

[Your palm hit will be like an ant hitting a tree. How would it possible to hurt Bu Jingtian with that power?]

[You really should have said yes to him at the beginning. That will be a kind favor to the No. 1 Cultivator. That is a priceless favor you would give him. He would have owed you forever.]

[No matter how much a prick Bu Jingtian is, he will consider reputation in some way. When people want to mess with you, they would be hesitate. At the very least, if he takes your dan beads, he wouldn't be so shameless to kill your men. That will be a win-win situation!]

[Look what you did. For your fake honor, you made a palm hit promise. You actually gave up many good things you could have gotten.]

[You will help him, yet you call him despicable... What a thankless task.]

Cold lights shined in Bu Jingtian's eyes. He blandly said, "No

matter whether I am despicable or distingue, it is not your turn to judge!"

As expected, he was angry.

Chapter 471: Palm Hit Attack

People around them all sighed at the same time. Such an opportunity for making peace was destroyed.

"However, if Feng Monarch insists, I will accept the challenge. Just stand here still and take a palm hit from you. Not to mention one hit, one hundred, one thousand, so what?"

Bu Jingtian arrogantly talked. He sounded full of confidence.

Ye Xiao smiled. "Good! Deal!"

Bu Jingtian laughed as he firmly stood on the floor and smiled. "Let's do it. In fact, Feng Monarch, do not hesitate too much while you are still living. The more you care, the more weak point you will be held! You are now under my control because you care too much. Are you trying to just give me a stupid palm hit to vent the anger in your heart?"

"Let me tell you more. The more you care, the more weak point you will show! The more likely you will be caught!" He wildly laughed. "Now and from now on, you will be controlled because of all your weak points. A man with lots of weak point will always bow to others..."

Behind him, the dozens of men who heard Bu Jingtian all shined their eyes.

It was a good warning to all these people too.

[Think about how you can defeat this Feng Monarch, guys!]

[I will take his dan beads. No matter what, I can't kill him because I owe him this favor. However, you are different. You can just feel free to get on him. I can take use of his weak point, why can't you?]

Other than that, what he said had shown his attitude. [Although Feng Monarch will help me, but no matter what happens to him, I won't help him. You can feel relax and do whatever you want to him. Do not consider my position.]

Ye Xiao stood up with a big smile on the face. He seemed indifferent to what Bu Jingtian said. He said, "Bu Jingtian, the well known No. 1 Cultivator indeed. How heroic... Good! Let's do it. You take one palm hit from me and survive, I will make those dan beads for you. Deal is a deal!"

Bu Jingtian disdainfully smiled. "Good. Deal is a deal. Not to mention whether I can survive, if I move any bit when you hit me, I don't think I will shamelessly stay in the martial world."

Ye Xiao slowly walked over to him as he blandly spoke, "Words come out like the wind. You can't take back what you have said. This attack, I will try all the power I can use to hit on your head. It is the key part of your body! Either you will die, or I will fail!"

Bu Jingtian laughed. "Feng Monarch is such an aboveboard man. Since you made it so clear, I will accept it. Just do it then. Every part of my body is invincible! Talking too much will not help you. Feng Monarch, you should watch out yourself. When an egg hits a rock, the rock will be fine, but the egg will crack!"

It was a clear statement. [I don't need you to consider my condition. You should better worry about yourself!]

Ye Xiao didn't take it as an offense; instead, he just laughed. "I am going to do it now. Watch out your head!"

Bu Jingtian was casual. He said, "Do it then!"

Ye Xiao smiled and jumped up. In the air, he rolled up his sleeves and a white hand reached out from the sleeve. Under the sunshine, it looked crystal and clear.

Such a pale and elegant hand.

Long fingers, pale skin—it was like a hand of a girl. It was even more exquisite than a girl's hand.

He slowly rose and gradually got down. That hand was aiming at Bu Jingtian's head.

Bu Jingtian coldly laughed. He was still looking straight forward. He didn't even care about the hand that was about to hit on his head.

That palm hit didn't even have any trace of power.

Apparently, it was weak like nothing.

Feng Zhiling said he would use all power he had, yet it didn't seem like it!

Everybody was watching.

"Pay attention. After this attack, that legendary Bu Jingtian will die for sure. The last chapter of a legend is right here!" Ling Wuxie stared at them concentratedly in the sky.

"Uh?" Xiu of the Heavens and Wan of the Clouds were both surprised. They didn't know what to say.

Their cultivation might have been restrained, but they still had sharp eyes of super powerful cultivators.

For them, at any situation, that was a palm hit with no power!

Such a soft hit couldn't even kill a fly, not to mention a man.

[Why are you so sure about it, Ling Wuxie?]

They looked at Ling Wuxie. They believed in their own eyes.

They believed that this Ling fool was no stronger than them in foresight. They didn't think that Ling Wuxie could see things that they couldn't see!

Ling Wuxie blandly spoke, "Don't look at me. Look at Feng Zhiling! After this palm hit, if Bu Jingtian lives, Feng Monarch will become another's tool from now on. Bu Jingtian must die! To be honest, I don't know how he will kill Bu Jingtian, but after this hit, he will surely kill Bu Jingtian. Otherwise, his challenge will be completely a joke. A useless joke!"

"People like Feng Monarch will never be controlled!"

"Look at him, what a proud man. If he doesn't have the confidence to kill Bu Jingtian, he wouldn't have made this happen. It is much better to talk with your master. If he is here, I won't need to explain so much. Geniuses are lonely!"

The two ladies stared at Ling Wuxie with anger, and then they looked back to Feng Zhiling. They thought, [What a prick. He is obviously a fool. He just loves to act like he is much better than others. After all, he doesn't dare to say he is better than our master... Wait. Pah. That is wrong. Look at him, how can he be in the same league with our master. Let's just wait till Feng Zhiling fails. If he doesn't make it, we are so going to humiliate you! We will humiliate you so badly that you will feel ashamed and shut up!"]

While Ling Wuxie and the two ladies were talking, Ye Xliao's pale hand suddenly changed color right before it hit on Bu Jingtian's head. It became golden and shiny!

At this moment, the golden hand was in perfect use.

Over Bu Jingtian's head, there seemed to be a tiny sun.

Nobody could see the exact move of Feng Monarch's hand. All they could see was a mass of strong light.

Chapter 472: Killed by One Hit!

Bu Jingtian was shocked too. At this moment, he clearly felt that the hand above his head was rapidly operating martial art. It was going to hit with an extremely strong power. However, Feng Monarch was in a low level. Even though he had operated the martial art into an extreme extent, even if it was a special martial art that could make his attack much powerful than it should be, Bu Jingtian believed it wouldn't threaten his life!

Besides, he could feel the power inside that hand!

Such power could never hurt him!

Such attack could not even break his defensive energy shield!

Bu Jingtian didn't move, but only stood there!

He had even prepared words to say.

He had decided what to say after this hit, to give Feng Monarch a lesson and tease him.

[The head of Bu Jingtian is not something that anybody can hit on!]

[Today, I endured this for the dan beads, however, Feng Monarch of Ling-Bao Hall will pay for what he did today! It will cost him a

lot!]

[People live different lives. Some lives are even worse than death!]

Under everyone's watch, that golden hand that shined like sun heavily fell down!

Ling-Bao Hall's men nervously watched it. People of the two great sect were disdainful. - Puff! - The hand hit on Bu Jingtian's head!

- Boom! -

- Crack! -

Something extremely weird and horrible, one that should have never happened, one that was impossible to happen, suddenly happened!

The head of Bu Jingtian, the No.1 Cultivator, was like a snowball in a firing stove.

- Boom! - It exploded!

At the same time, Feng Monarch's hand didn't stop. It kept going down from the top of the head. The shiny golden hand hit on Bu Jingtian's head, went down to his chest, and then cut the entire

upper part of his body!

Blood splashed out on the floor, some even went dozens of meters away!

Feng Monarch's black clothes was suddenly tainted with red!

He didn't save any power to form a protection on himself. He truly did put all his power to that palm hit! All power was in that hand!

- Puff! -

Feng Monarch got down to the floor. He held back the red hand and looked at it. It was a hand covered by flesh and blood.

As expected, he was standing right in front of Bu Jingtian's dead body.

Not exactly a "dead body" though. Bu Jingtian's head was broken into pieces. It should be just a few body parts.

His legs were still standing there, yet nothing was left from his chest. The tall man only had a short part of his body left, like a seven years old kid standing in front of an adult.

He was two heads short!

Bu Jingtian's body was swaying, but it was still standing there. Ye Xiao was indifferent. He reached out his hand and pointed on that body, then he blandly spoke, "Aren't you tired standing all the time? Just get down!"

Bu Jingtian's body fell down!

- Puff! -

The mutilated body of that world's No. 1 Cultivator heavily fell on the floor. Flesh, blood and organs splashed on the floor along with it.

The legend, the No. 1 Cultivator in the Land of Han-Yang, Bu Jingtian, lied on the floor like a broken bag in everybody's gaze. Everyone in the two great sects couldn't believe it. They had the same thought at the same time. [It turns out... Even the No. 1 Cultivator in the world... When he dies... The body is no different than the others... Only it is even bleaker... Dying with a broken body...

How miserable!!

How could Bu Jingtian die? How is it possible?

How could such a thing happen?!

They all felt crazy at the moment!

Maybe they were crazy. Maybe they thought they were in a dream. They were actually in such a ridiculous dream!

If not, how could the super powerful legendary cultivator, the No. 1 in the world, be killed by just one palm hit! How could he die like this? How could he be killed by just a man of level 3 of Sky Origin Stage?

[How is that possible?]

There was a huge strength gap between the two sides. They believed that even a hundred Feng Monarch together could never harm Bu Jingtian a bit. They couldn't believe that such a terrifying man would die so easily!

It was silent.

Even when a needle dropped on the floor, it could be heard!

No matter whether they were men of Ling-Bao Hall or men of the great sects, even the of the five clans, all of them were shocked. They were totally blank in the heads.

They didn't know what they should do or think.

Nobody noticed that in the air, there was a small wave of energy flows. It disappeared very soon though.

However, noticed or not, this place, which was full of dead bodies, was suddenly... brighten up a little bit...

Ye Xiao frowned.

He then casually looked at the dead body of Bu Jingtian. He spoke with a sigh, "You really shouldn't have accepted the challenge... Let me tell you one last thing. This hit from me, even if you are ten times, hundred times, even a thousand times stronger than you were, you could never handle it. You were merely Level 9 of Sky Origin Stage... You thought too highly of yourself and you didn't even think about defending... Anyway. No matter how great a story is, it will end someday. Your story ends today!"

"You knew you were dying, so you came. You knew you were dying, so you accepted the challenge. I had to let you die! You didn't even know what you want to do if you could live on... I just brought death to you, which you deserved!"

If he said so earlier before the man died, people would definitely laugh at him.

It sounded just like a fool bragging about himself!

However, now when he said it, nobody dared to question it.

The truth was right there. Who could possible question him anymore!

Many of them trembled and stepped back.

"Elder Bu..." People of Sunlight Sect finally shouted out with fear and rushed over to Bu Jingtian's body.

Both Sunlight Sect and Starlight Sect had the same thought.

They didn't believe Bu Jingtian would die so easily. They believed there must be some nasty trick behind the attack!

They believed that if they started to check the dead body, they could find something!

Chapter 473: An Egg Hits a Rock!

They wanted to confirm that Feng Monarch didn't really have such power. They wanted to believe that Feng Monarch only won by luck. They wanted it to be an opportunity to slaughter Ling-Bao Hall!

Bu Jingtian's death was a disaster for Sunlight Sect indeed!

It was also a hatred that would last forever!

They would never forget what happened today.

Sunlight Sect and Starlight Sect together, about sixty superior cultivators gathered over at the same time. They looked at that cracked body on the floor. They couldn't believe it. [Is this really Bu Jingtian?]

[Is this really the No. 1 Cultivator in the world, Bu Jingtian?]

[Could it be a fake one?]

[Fake? Please just keep fooling yourself. That is enough.]

...

In the sky.

Wan of the Clouds and Xiu of the Heavens couldn't help rubbing their eyes.

Truth was right there in their eyes, but they still couldn't believe it. They couldn't believe that this Feng Monarch had actually killed Bu Jingtian in just one hit.

"How did he do it? How is this possible?" Xiu-Er said. Her eyes were pretty and clear.

The two ladies looked to Ling Wuxie at the same time.

For the first time, they thought that this Lord Ling was profound. [Was he acting like a fool on purpose for the whole time?!]

[He said Feng Monarch could do it. And then Feng Monarch actually did it!]

[What is going on? Other than Feng Zhiling who made it happen, nobody else knows it better than this mysterious Lord Ling!]

"Don't look at me like that." Ling Wuxie bitterly smiled. "I didn't help him."

The two ladies rolled their eyes.

[Of course not. We know you didn't.]

[If you did, no matter how strong you are, we would definitely sense something from you, as we are this close to you. That is the problem... Something that is impossible actually happened.]

[Hmm? What did he say? He said he didn't help? Does it mean he doesn't know what happened down there either?]

As they were wondering, Ling Wuxie said, "I did see the result, yet I didn't see how Feng Zhiling did it." He paused and then went on, "I think the problem should be that golden hand of Feng Monarch. That golden shiny light on his hand. I don't think he used it to enhance his power. Instead, I think he used it to cover our sight. He must have killed Bu Jingtian using another method."

"I guess he has something hidden inside his hand!"

"Maybe it is some secret weapon. Maybe something really special. It should be a killing move that he has been hiding all the time."

"What is it then? I didn't see it." He was upset about it too.

It was reasonable that others couldn't see it.

But he had especially paid attention to it, yet he actually still couldn't see it. That was embarrassing!

What on earth gave Feng Monarch the power to kill someone

who was much more powerful than him in just one hit?

Ling Wuxie couldn't figure it out. He thought and thought but couldn't think of anything.

Even for him, it was impossible to do such an incredible thing!

Just what did Feng Monarch do to kill a nearly invincible enemy in just one hit under such a situation...

That was far beyond legend. That was a myth...

That was totally a fairy tale!

What Ling Wuxie wanted to know was... What Feng Monarch had hidden behind that golden glow?

What did he hide?

What Ye Xiao had said, 'This hit from me, even if you are ten times, hundred times, even a thousand times stronger than you were, you could never handle it', was true. If Ling Wuxie knew this too, what would he feel! In fact, Ye Xiao actually did kill somebody that was thousands of times stronger than Bu Jingtian.

...

Ye Xiao made it, but he did feel scared for one moment in his heart.

When he saw Bu Jingtian's body on the floor, his heart was still beating fast.

[He died?

For real!]

He tried to see the egg in the Space that was covered by blood. He felt like everything was unreal.

When he operated the golden hand to cover people's eyes by the shiny glow, he had held the egg in hand!

When he hit on Bu Jingtian's head, the egg had shown up in Ye Xiao's hand. He didn't really push it hard. He just touched the head! At that moment, he thought that there would be two possible results.

First, the egg might be broken! It would become a totally broken egg.

Second, Bu Jingtian's head would become the totally broken egg.

Bu Jingtian was right about the theory of an egg hitting a rock, but Ye Xiao did exactly use an egg to hit him.

Nobody knew that the egg could be so unbelievably tough!

After that hit, Bu Jingtian directly went to hell. He was totally dead. The egg didn't disappoint Ye Xiao, and everything was totally fine!

That was a reasonable thing though. The egg had killed Gu Jinlong earlier, in a very nasty way! Bu Jingtian was nothing compared to Gu Jinlong!

Even though Ye Xiao knew he had a good chance on this, he still felt worried when he made that hit. His heart was beating rapidly... [What if Brother Egg retreats?]

Truth was the egg was tough and strong.

Brother Egg also got a lot from this fight... So many people died. Their souls were wandering around and became soul energies.

Brother Egg just showed up for a second, but he had already gathered all those energies!

It hadn't wasted a bit!

However, Ye Xiao was so excited that he didn't notice it at all.

He was focusing on something else...

...

People of Sunlight Sect and Starlight Sect were all gathering around Bu Jingtian's body. They couldn't believe what they saw. They were even a bit angry and scared!

[This Feng Monarch actually killed Bu Jingtian!]

[Would it be too easy for him to kill... us...]

"I really didn't know that this elder was such a honorable man!" Feng Monarch spoke emotionally, "Elder Bu knew he would die, yet he still kept his words... What an honorable man! An honest man! I am full of respect for him. Nowadays, there are not many people who can be so honest and honorable like this man."

[He is dead anyway. It won't hurt to praise him a little.]

People of the two great sects all showed their red eyes when they heard Feng Monarch's shameless words.

Chapter 474: I Will Fight You All on My Own!

[This honest and honorable man, you just killed him!]

[You played such a trick! He wasn't allowed to defend your attack, and he had to take the hit!]

[Now he is dead because of your dirty trick... You actually act like praising him...]

[Don't you have a heart of shame?]

[For a dead man... No matter how much you praise him, even if you praise him so hard, he is still a dead man!]

[Even if you try to make him a legend, a myth, a miracle, it won't bring him back!]

[It is totally meaningless!]

Feng Monarch spoke with a sigh that was full of emotion, "Elder Bu kept his words. You all heard us. We all know what he promised. I am sorry for what happened to him... But it is a challenge that we all agreed... He made his promise and he kept it. I don't think you guys would break it, would you?"

He blinked. "I believe the superior cultivators of the two great

sects would never bring shame to our past Elder Bu..."

"I think, we, Ling-Bao Hall and the two great sects never had disagreement on anything serious. What happened has happened... Let's just let it go. Let's just move on. From now on, the mountains are still tall and the rivers are still long. We all have long trips in this martial world. We all have a long way to go in our lives... For me, I sincerely want to make friends with you all. Such a good idea. From now on, let's share our happiness and sorrow, and let's fight side by side..."

While he was talking with emotion, his eyes turned red.

Like he really meant it.

However, the superior cultivators who stood around Bu Jingtian's horrible body, after hearing the speech of Feng Monarch, they just felt furious! The flame of anger raised up in their hearts!

[What is this?

What the fxck is this?

You just killed our leader by one bloody hit. Now you actually want us to share happiness and sorrow, fight side by side with you?]

[Are you just so stupid? Or do you think we are that stupid?]

[What the fxck!]

[What is wrong with you?]

[You are an outstanding man, the Monarch of Ling-Bao Hall. That is true... But you can't take us all as stupid men?]

"Feng Zhiling, aren't you too ignoble and despicable?!" An elder of Sunlight Sect looked at the body on the floor. He couldn't hold the anger and sorrow in his heart!

Bu Jingtian was mean indeed.

But for Sunlight Sect, he was a guardian god!

His death was a heavy strike for Sunlight Sect!

This elder had been cursing Bu Jingtian daily, yet when Bu Jingtian really died in front of him, he couldn't accept it!

"I am ignoble? I am despicable? Am I? I don't feel it at all. Why? Heh, heh. Look at you. How you make the black white and make the white black! You do everything inurbane and take every means to reach your purpose."

Ye Xiao frowned, then he spoke with a cold smile, "To know oneself is sure progress. You, two great sects, don't you understand

how to admit defeat for a bet?"

Sixty-three superior cultivators of the two great sects all showed their furious faces. However, they didn't have a word to say.

It was indeed a challenge Bu Jingtian accepted!

Everybody saw it. They all knew it.

Feng Monarch really did only make one hit. He had even told everybody that he was going to kill Bu Jingtian. Bu Jingtian didn't get away because he accepted it. Now that he died under that promised hit, who could be blamed?

Everybody was there for the whole thing. They all saw it clearly!

No dirty tricks were seen.

Maybe it was too much to call Feng Monarch ignoble or despicable!

"Feng Monarch, such hatred will never end. We, Sunlight Sect, will be Ling-Bao Hall's enemy forever!" An elder of Sunlight Set stared at Ye Xiao and talked slowly.

They didn't have a righteous reason to argue, so they had to do it the tough way.

"So now we are enemies forever? Were we that close before? So this is how you define your relation to others?"

Ye Xiao put his hands on the back and half closed his eyes. "You just cannot admit defeat, can you, Sunlight Sect? Do you think Ling-Bao Hall is weak and you can bully us as you want? Is that why you can say such shameless words?"

He grinned. "Words are like winds. Since you made your statement, why don't we just figure something out here today? I won't mind. I really won't. You don't need to just stand there and take my hit. Let's just fight in a fair way. If you don't think you can do it, it is fine if you want me to fight you all by myself. Come on!"

He shook his sleeves and showed his two pale hands. Suddenly, the golden glow shined again.

Sixty-three men saw the golden hand and they all stepped back with fear.

That golden hand just killed the No. 1 Cultivator, Bu Jingtian in one hit!

[What is his real level status?]

[Even Bu Jingtian couldn't handle his palm hit, would I... be able to defend it?]

They all had the same thought. They thought it would be suicide

if they got near Feng Monarch.

Ye Xiao spoke with horror, "Come on. Let me fight you all on my own. You won't be bullying me, I promise. Come over here, you pricks over there! I was worrying that I didn't have a reason to kill more today. Now I do. Aren't you enemies forever to me?"

He suddenly widely opened his eyes; they were filled with killing intent. He made a stride and got closer to them!

As he made this step, those cultivators hearts were all filled with fear.

The qi of killing rushed over to them like tides.

His killing intent actually felt like real qi!

A stream of extremely cold qi was like something from hell, making those men feel cold and frightened.

Even though some of them were in the master levels of Sky Origin Stage, they couldn't help trembling when the cold qi hit them.

They stared at Feng Monarch with their eyes full of fear!

They all realized something at this moment. [It turns out... This Feng Monarch has been hiding his true capability for the whole

time!]

Chapter 475: Frightening!

[It turns out Feng Monarch was strong enough to shock the world!

He is even stronger than Bu Jingtian!

That is why he can kill Bu Jingtian with just one hit!

He might play tricks on other sides, but this aura and the qi, he can never fake it!

He can never fake that overwhelming and brutal qi of killing!

Only those who are in certain positions in the world can produce such qi. Only those who have superior cultivation capability and have killed many lives could produce such overwhelming qi of killing!

That aura, that qi of killing that Feng Monarch produces... is invincible!

One who has killed less than a million lives can hardly get such qi!

Such horrible qi of killing is enough to make him the No. 1 Cultivator in the world!]

"This is, 'million slaughters makes great qi of killing'!" That elder of Sunlight Sect stepped back with fear. He had opened his eyes wide enough, like he was looking at a ghost. Apparently, he was frightened by the story he knew.

He suddenly felt regret!

[I should've thought about it.

I really should!

This Feng Zhiling has been calm and casual facing all the assassins in the world who had come to kill him. So many superior cultivators stood opposite to him, yet he could walk in casually like he was taking a walk in the park.

How would he do that if he wasn't that confident. How would he risk his life to just show off?

When things were really bad on his side, he actually declared a rule of his own to the entire world of assassins!

He turned over the situation and controlled all those who came here to take his lives!

We all ignored something important. Feng Zhiling must be very confident. He at least had a perfect plan to escape from that. That was the most important thing he need to make that turn-over. Otherwise, one tiny mistake could take him to death!

How would he do that if he didn't have that confidence?

It is the same reason here. If he wasn't really confident, how would he make such a challenge to Bu Jingtian?

He is the one who has been confident all the time. He knew he would win. He was just playing everybody like the world was a game map for him!]

The elder thought more than that... the House of the Chaotic Storms would never show kindness to anybody in the world. However, back when Feng Zhiling met the House of the Chaotic Storms at the auction, why would Master Bai be so kind to him? The reason was simple. Feng Zhiling also had great capability that could shock the world. He just kept hiding his true capability, just like Xiu of the Heavens!

Thinking about that, the elder sighed. [When Feng Monarch asked for the challenge, everybody thought he was crazy. They were all waiting to see him become a joke!]

In fact, now everybody knew that Feng Monarch was never a joke. When the challenge began, Bu Jingtian was bound to die!

Feng Monarch had such great cultivation capability, yet he acted like he was weak. Bu Jingtian had to die!

Ye Xiao looked down to those superior cultivators of the two

great sects. His face looked casual, yet it was full of killing intent.

He was operating East-rising Purple Qi at second level, Purple Qi Descends. He stood there like a great mountain, untouchable. He was like a king looking down upon the world!

No heroes dared to offend him!

At the same time, the killing qi that he gained in his two lives were rolling up heavily!

At this moment, Ye Xiao had a feeling. [If I want, I can kill the entire world within seconds!]

The sixty-three Sky Origin Cultivators of the two great sects were all several times stronger than Ye Xiao in real cultivation levels!

However, in front of Ye Xiao, nobody dared to move recklessly. Not even one of them dared to breath heavily.

There was fear in their eyes, and their faces were pale. On the floor, there was Bu Jingtian's body. He was a vivid example to them. Their chests were full of hatred, yet none of them dared to step out and say anything about revenge!

They all felt like they were trapped in a snow mountain in winter naked.

That extreme coldness made them feel hopeless!

In the sky.

Ling Wuxie's pupils shrieked.

Looking down at Feng Monarch, his eyes were full of confusion. He murmured, "His killing qi, why is it so dense and heavy? Only those great slaughterers in the world can have such qi... This killing qi is so close to those great figures in Human Realm Above Heavens... How did he cultivate himself into such status? He is so young. That is unreasonable!"

"Did he already kill everyone in this Land of Han-Yang? But he isn't in a right level."

Lord Ling was confused. He was just making random guesses.

"Look how vigorous he is! Is it too much?" Ling Wuxie murmured, "I can see he is bluffing, but how does he make such vigor out! It looks so real. Why? How?"

He operated the Universal Eyes again to observe Feng Zhiling. What he could see was still a blurred figure. There was a mass of chaos around it.

He still couldn't see through it.

"Weird! How weird!" He rubbed on the head. He was stunned. "This man... What he will achieve in the future is truly immeasurable..."

Xiu of the Heavens and Wan of the Clouds were both shocked too.

Looking at Feng Monarch, they thought of their master.

Suddenly, they had a feeling. [Master... When he was in this age, did he have such vigor? Did he have such verve? Did he have such killing qi? Did he have such achievement?]

They suddenly felt scared.

"Shame. This Feng Monarch was born in a low family. He is nothing but a local resident of a low level realm. He is not a noble born in Human Realms Above Heavens. He wasn't born in the aristocratic clans. If he were raised up in a aristocratic family in Human Realm Above Heavens, he should become a great figure in the universe!"

Ling Wuxie kept praising him. "If he has a background like your master, and if they fight against each other all along... I won't be surprised if he became someone like the four Dominators of East, West, South and North."

...

Chapter 476: Woeful

"What a shame. He has no such opportunity nor qualification. Your master doesn't have such a good opponent that can boost his cultivation. They were both unlucky on this. They both are impossible to step on the highest stage in the world. How fate plays us..."

Ling Wuxie made a long sigh.

"This is such a woeful thing!"

Wan of the Clouds and Xiu of the Heavens looked at each other. They both saw helplessness in their eyes.

That was right. Feng Monarch was full of schemes. He was a wise man, also a capable man. He was vicious and had a broad view... He had everything a great cultivator needed!

However, the only thing that weakened him... was that he was in a low level realm. Too low. It was lower than the lowest!

In the life of a super great cultivator, the most important thing was never his friends, his family, or his women... It was his opponent!

A great opponent who was in an equal level was the most important! If he didn't work hard, he would be defeated!

The motivation from a great opponent was horribly effective!

To have such an opponent was every great man's dream.

The four Dominators in the Human Realm Above Heavens occupied the peak positions, because... the four of them had been fighting against each other since they were young. They fought and fought and never gave up. Whoever was left down a bit, he would try everything he could to catch up to others. They kept chasing each other and passed each other. They just didn't give up!

They kept fighting and kept rushing up. They always had a goal to reach. They never gave up. Finally, they became the absolute dominators in the Human Realm Above Heavens!

They were still fighting against each other. Never surrendering, never giving up!

That was why the four Dominators were still progressing greatly.

[Even though our master is a talented man, he really needs an opponent who is in an equal level at every aspect!]

It was such a lonely thing to be invincible. It was also lonely to have no opponents. The loneliness to be at the top was a feeling that nobody could understand. That was why he wanted to improve himself through the Heavenly Mystery, such an extreme method. If he had such a great opponent, for Master Bai, he wouldn't have to get the Heavenly Mystery. It was the worst

choice to choose the Heavenly Mystery!

He was born to be a great man who would rush up to the top someday. He just needed an opponent who could motivate him!

Now this man showed up. It was a shame that he was a man of such a low realm.

Wan-Er and Xiu-Er helplessly sighed for this cruel reality.

How long would it take...

For an opponent to develop to be strong enough to get in the Human Realm Above Heavens, strong enough to fight against Master Bai?

When that day comes, things were bound to be too late, everything would be too late...

"However, it is not a permanent way to control his enemies by bluffing... It won't last forever..." Ling Wuxie frowned. "He doesn't have the ability to defeat the sixty-three men down there. It looks like he has occupied the upper position, it looks like he controls everything, but if he pushes it too hard, every one of those men can easily defeat him. Feng Monarch is definitely going to fail this... How will he deal with this situation?"

Ling Wuxie thought for a while, but he couldn't think of any practical way.

He thought that if he were Feng Monarch, he would have died over three times under such a situation.

However, he believed Feng Monarch had a back up plan to deal with the next situation. What was that plan though?

The two good men he had sent out for a mission, Ning Biluo and Zhao Pingtian, even if they both came back, they couldn't help him much. They would only reveal his true capability sooner.

His special poison was powerful and overwhelming, but he had used it up. Those cultivators stood far away from each other, so even if he used the poison, it wouldn't work that well.

They were warned already. They could easily get away.

He acted like he was powerful, yet he wasn't. He didn't have the capability to handle the current situation.

He did shock the enemies for now, but his enemies had lost an important man. They didn't have a good reason to retreat, so the fight would begin sooner or later.

When it got serious, bluffing wouldn't help anymore.

One thing that Ling Wuxie couldn't understand the most was that Feng Zhiling had already occupied the higher position, so it

was reasonable to try to suppress people with his strong vigor. However, he made such dense killing qi. That was useless. If anyone of the cultivators felt it dangerous to a certain extent, he would fight with desperation. Wouldn't it be a bad thing for Feng Monarch?

...

People of the two great sects were getting impatient now.

Those of Starlight Sect were a bit better. They were gloating in their hearts though. After all, the man who died was the guardian of Sunlight Sect. Starlight Sect did have supports for many years, yet they had been suppressed by Bu Jingtian for a long time.

Bu Jingtian died. It was a pity. However, it made them feel relieved.

[Finally, this man died.]

[We may not get beyond Sunlight Sect right away, but if we give it some time, we will be the No. 1 Sect in the Land of Han-Yang sooner or later!]

On the other hand, people of Sunlight Sect couldn't accept it, either mentally or physically. They were full of anger!

They didn't know whether to step forward or step back.

[Leave? That is not an option!]

[Our guardian died here miserably, and we just leave like this?]

[If we retreat like this, we will be skinned off by the grand masters!]

[But... what can we do if we stay?]

[We fight?]

[Are we going to fight a man who killed Bu Jingtian in one hit?]

[Even Bu Jingtian was killed, how do we fight against such an enemy?]

[That is not a fight. That is suicide!]

[That is totally stupid!]

Ye Xiao's cold eyes looked around the sixty-three men. He blandly spoke, "Why don't you leave yet? Do you want a drink from me now?"

That elder of Sunlight Sect was furious. He spoke with an angry voice, "Feng Monarch, you killed our man. Don't you think you

should say something?"

He sounded like he was being reasonable, yet everybody could hear the fear in his voice!

Apparently, he really just wanted to have some casual words from Feng Monarch about it!

Chapter 477: Clean Sweep!

"Say something? What to say?" Ye Xiao wouldn't give him what he wanted. He rolled up his eyes and blandly spoke, "Do you really think... I should say anything after killing a person? Let me ask you something. Bu Jingtian, the No. 1 Cultivator in the world, had killed over a million people in his life. Did he ever say anything to anybody about it? Or do I remember it wrong?"

The elder from Sunlight Sect viciously spoke, "Feng Monarch, you are outstanding in martial art indeed, but... You are also a business man, right? Business man always wants peace because it brings profits. Maybe we don't have anyone who can defeat you in Sunlight Sect, however, it won't be a difficult thing to make your business to fail in this world. Don't you think so?"

Ye Xiao's eyes flashed with cold light. He blandly spoke, "Oh you want to stop Ling-Bao Hall's business? So you are threatening me now?"

He then showed a cruel expression as he smiled. "I guess Bu Jingtian did teach you some lessons before he died. Look at you. You know how to threat me now... Impressive. You can see what is important to me now, can't you?"

He smiled and then pointed at the dead body of Bu Jingtian. "Fine. Threat me! Follow Bu Jingtian! Do what he did to me, alright? I accept it. Like I said to him. If anyone of you can survive my palm hit, I will say something to explain it as my fault! If you are afraid that one person is too weak to accept the challenge, you can come together. It won't make much difference to me really!"

There was viciousness in his eyes as he looked at that elder. At the moment, he didn't even try to cover his killing intent as he said, "If you dare to say what you just said to me once again, I will take it as a yes to this challenge!"

The elder's face turned completely pale. He was shocked by that massive killing qi. He stepped back three steps, with a face pale like paper. He didn't know what to say, afraid that if he said any word wrong, Feng Zhiling would commit a massacre.

"Bluffing. Pretending. Look how well he plays these tricks. For thousands of years, he is really the only person who can do it like this. Maybe even in the thousands of years to come, he will still be!" Ling Wuxie praised with sincerity up there in the sky. That was a big compliment.

A man, who looked tough but weak inside, actually scared the sixty-three top class cultivators in the world and made them stand there, afraid to even move.

That was something nobody would believe... If Ling Wuxie didn't see it with his own eyes, he would never believe it. It was like a ghost had appeared in the bright day time!

It was a historical event. He believed there would never be such a thing in the future anymore!

"Look at you, a p*ssy face. I haven't done anything yet, but look how scared you are. If I really get serious on you, I think you will

be scared to death really. Fine. I am a man with mercy. Let me say something nice so that you can take the body and leave. I feel good right now. I won't tear his body into pieces!" Ye Xiao sounded so vicious and impatient. He played a palm hit.

On the floor, Bu Jingtian's body flew up because of that palm hit. It rolled over in the air and then fell down back to the ground!

"You! You're too doing too much!"

When the body just left the floor, people of the two great sects rushed over together. However, they didn't want to get harmed by that palm, so none of them tried to hold that body. When the body hit the floor again, it was like a heavy punch hitting on everybody's face! That was embarrassing!

Bu Jingtian was the leader for this tour after all. Now he was dead, and his body was ven humiliated like this. None of them felt comfortable about it.

The sixty-three men crowded around that body. They were confronting Ye Xiao.

There was anger in all their eyes.

Some of them had reached the point of losing their tempers. In their eyes, there showed up a sense of determination.

They were thinking that it was better to fight hard to die than to

be humiliated like this! They were almost going to rush out and fight it out against Feng Monarch!

They just wanted to die together with him!

At this moment, a deep voice sounded. It sounded from under Bu Jingtian's dead body. The sixty-three men looked to it at the same time.

Some of them even hoped that a miracle happened, and Bu Jingtian would return from death and continue his legend!

However, they should be disappointed. Bu Jingtian didn't return. A dark smoke came out from under the dead body. Within just a while, the smoke covered everybody around the body!

The sixty-three men were all around the body. When the dark smoke came out, they were so close to it. Besides, they were all focusing on Feng Monarch, so none of them noticed that there was something wrong with that body.

At the moment, the sixty-three men were in the same situation. When they noticed the smoke, they were already covered by the dark smoke!

They were shocked and then their expression changed!

They were astonished!

They had seen that overwhelming poisonous fog earlier, that was why they didn't show up when the big fight happened. They were frightened by that poison. When they showed up, they stood far away from each other, wanting to take a good position to fight once people of Ling-Bao Hall came out to help Feng Monarch. Other than that, they feared that Feng Monarch still had that poison bead. Even so, they had been cautious and careful the whole time.

They really didn't want to get hit by that poison. It was certain death.

In their plan, once they saw that poison came out, they would retreat in the fastest speed!

With their capabilities, it was an easy thing to get away before the poison spread.

That poison was overwhelming and powerful, but it took time to spread. Besides, it could only kill people in a certain area. As long as they kept attention on it, they could get away from it.

However, while they were so cautious and careful, the poison never showed up.

When Feng Monarch asked Bu Jingtian's to accept that challenge, they thought he had given up, but they didn't totally put down their alertness.

When Bu Jingtian died, they were stunned. Finally, they stopped being cautious because they couldn't focus.

After that, Feng Monarch kept provoking them with words. They felt the power Feng Zhiling showed. Such a great figure. Such a heroic man. Such a monarch. They started to believe that Feng Zhiling was strong enough to kill them all by a fair fight. He could kill Bu Jingtian in one hit, so they believed he wouldn't need to use that poison to deal with them. They believed that he just wanted to hide his true power, so he used the poison earlier. As he had shown them his true power, they thought he wouldn't use the poison anymore!

Chapter 478: I Don't Want to Kill!

That was why they loosened their cautious heart against the poison.

Especially when Feng Monarch further insulted Bu Jingtian's body, they felt extremely furious. The caution in their hearts were completely gone!

At that moment, when they all gathered together preparing to fight their enemy together... The poison fog showed up again!

That was surprising! Nobody was prepared for it!

Everybody of the two great sects were hit!

They were all poisoned!

When the most horrible thing was impossible to happen, it suddenly just happened, completely out of everybody's expectation!

They all felt so close to death at this moment!

Not only the men of the two great sects were shocked, even the assassins of Ling-Bao Hall and Wan Zhenghao were stunned. They watched it happen with astonishment. Finally, they knew that Feng Monarch never wanted to set those men free!

He had planned to kill them all!

Those men were on his killing list already. He had bluffed, played tricks, given weird talks, driven people away... Those were his schemes!

He did those things only to serve as his last step. What he really wanted to do was to use that poison to kill all those sixty-three great cultivators!

Kill them all!

Once and for all!

He had worked a lot to prepare the poison beads, but he only made five beads. He had used four of them to deal with the huge amount of assassins earlier, so he only had one left. However, this single poison bead was going to kill the best force of the two great sects at the same time!

The last bead had made the best impact!

Now, he had no poison beads at all! Not even one!

However, no matter how he would swear that he didn't have any, whoever had seen how horrible that poison was and knew what he had done just now, would never believe it anymore!

Ye Xiao acted like he still had hundreds of poison dan beads in his pocket! No matter how many he took out, nobody would be surprised. If people found out he had nothing... they would feel shocked instead!

They didn't believe it. They couldn't believe it! They didn't dare to!

Those who believed he had no more poison beads were all dead! No exception!

After that dark smoke spread, they could see Feng Monarch standing there with his hands on his back, looking right back to them with cold eyes.

In his eyes, there was no cruelty or mercy. There was only coldness and indifference.

"I said, leave or die. Do you really think I was joking?" Feng Monarch stood straight up in the fog. His voice was like a cold wind blowing from hell.

"I warned you, but none of you listened," Ye Xiao spoke with cold smile, "do you really think I wouldn't dare to kill you because you are part of the two great sects?"

"Do you really think the two great sects can control the entire world?"

"Holding your sects' names which are rotted for thousands of years, you actually think you can do whatever you want in this martial world..." His eyes were full of sneering and pity. "I have to say that you are wrong. Now, taste the punishment for your mistakes with your lives."

The cultivators looked at him with desperation, with none among them knowing what to say anymore.

They started to feel itchy on their bodies!

Their entire bodies!

From head to eyes, to nose, to ears, to mouth, to neck, to chest... to the toes, it started!

It was such an unbearable feeling that made them mad and freaked out.

However, they had seen what happened to those assassins. They tried everything they could to keep themselves calm, and they tried so hard not to scratch it.

They didn't even dare to move a bit. They didn't want to motivate the poison.

They just stared at Feng Monarch with fury in their eyes.

They all made up their minds.

[If we are going to die today, you will come to hell with us!]

They failed to suppress the poison, so they only had the power to make a last strike now.

After that last strike, no matter whether they would make it or not, they wouldn't be able to handle that itch anymore.

The last strike was too important to fail!

They had to make it!

Ye Xiao blinked and blandly said, "However, man should have mercy. I am not a man who loves killing. There have been too many lives that were lost in this place. I don't want to kill more. You are all piteous men who only follow orders. You came to my place acting arrogant, but you haven't hurt any of my people. I don't have to kill you after all. So, I can spare your lives, as long as..."

He paused and said, "Whoever promises that the hatred will be gone after today can come over and take a dan bead to detoxify himself. After that, we just say goodbye and live on our lives."

His words was like a blow of cool wind, blowing off the haze of

death. Everybody stopped the crazy thoughts.

They all looked at Feng Monarch.

Who would want to die if they had the chance to live?

Maybe nobody else could detoxify that poison beads, but Feng Monarch surely could, not only because he was the one who made it, but also because he was the only person in the world who could make supreme dan beads. He was a legend!

If he couldn't do it, nobody could!

Some of those men thought, [If I can survive tonight, I will make a promise. So what? Even if I don't have to make that promise, after tonight, I will never be against him in the future. It is just too horrible to fight him...]

However, many of them just stared at Ye Xiao with viciousness. They nodded as a sign of agreement with that proposal. However, their eyes showed that once they leave here alive, they would gather whatever they could in their sect to kill Feng Zhiling. Even if they couldn't kill Feng Zhiling, they would kill all the others in Ling-Bao Hall!

They would definitely take revenge after this!

Chapter 479: Instant Kills

No matter what they had to do, they wouldn't let Feng Monarch live today!

Whoever showed mercy today would definitely fall in the future!

Ye Xiao coldly looked at them, like he could see through everybody's heart. All of them had already stopped talking; they just stared at Ye Xiao while nodding their heads. On their foreheads was sweat because they tried so hard to bear the itch.

"It seems you all agreed to my proposal. Good. I don't need to treat you differently then." Ye Xiao talked and nodded. He took out a white bottle and opened it. - Splash. - Countless black dan beads rolled on the floor shining with some weird glow.

That was about a hundred beads.

"These are what you need!" Ye Xiao softly spoke, "Whoever agrees to let the hatred go can come and take one."

And then he stepped aside and watched.

- Whoo! -

Sixty-three men moved like starving tigers rushing to the meat. The dan beads that could save their lives were right there. They

used up their last bit of energy to fight for the beads. They wanted to get the dan beads before they lost their minds!

It was their last chance to move themselves.

If the dan beads didn't show up, they would have used the last chance to attack Ye Xiao. They would fight as hard as they could to kill Ye Xiao.

However, now that the dan beads showed up, everybody wanted to take it as soon as they could! They couldn't help using up all the remaining energy they had for it, in order to be the fastest one!

They were almost fighting. Everybody kept scratching the dan beads on the floor trying to take as many as they could and swallow them!

They were all Sky Origin Stage cultivators, and the weakest among them was in Level 7. They truly moved like lightning.

Within only the time of a blink, they all had at least one dan bead.

There should be about thirty dan beads on the floor if they only took one that they needed. Some of them just took the rest too.

Feng Monarch's dan beads were valuable things. They must be some supreme dan beads that could cure most diseases. They thought they might need it in the future when they were poisoned.

It was safer than nothing to keep some with them.

Besides, they never really agreed to just let everything go.

[We just nodded. We never said yes. We never made any promise!

We are still enemies.

Now I have this dan bead, I won't fear your poison anymore!]

The only problem they should think about was whether that dan bead could really save them. Would it work?

Feng Monarch always kept his words though. It worked well!

It worked fast. Some of them had just swallowed the dan beads, and they stopped feeling itchy immediately. The dan beads hadn't even reached their stomach yet!

"Hmm. Now that you promised we are good, please just leave. Let's see each other again in the martial world. I hope we can become friends, cultivators." Feng Monarch showed them a warm smile as he casually spoke.

"We are good now?" The sixty-three men viciously stared at Ye Xiao. Those who had thought that they wouldn't fight Feng Zhiling again started to look at him with viciousness. Some

elders among them even laughed with a vicious and loud voice, "Hahahahahaha... Feng Monarch, you are so naive!"

"Oh?" Ye Xiao half closed his eyes.

"You humiliated us like this. You insulted us about our persistence. You dishonor our personality. You made us ashamed. Do you really think... that it will be ended by sending us away? Do you think we will forget how you insulted us?" Some of them spoke in a brutal way.

Ye Xiao changed the expression on his face, and his eyes were full of cold lights again. He blandly spoke, "So you mean... this will never end? Your hatred will remain? You want to break what you promised?"

They stared at him viciously.

Ye Xiao slowly nodded as he said, "Good. Good. Tough men. Honorable men. Good men in the martial world. Admirable. I am being naive, however, heavens know what we did. Promise always means something..."

Feng Zhiling didn't finish when Wan Zhenghao suddenly exclaimed.

"What the fxck... That..." Wan Zhenghao acted like he saw ghost as his fat body uncontrollably trembled. That was unbelievable that such a fat guy could make such girly voice.

Not only Wan Zehnghao, but also those men of the two great sects, and even those assassins under Liu Changjun's command all looked scared, like they all saw ghost.

Especially the men of the five clans. They all had pale faces, shaking so hard like they were about to fall down.

The reason was... while the men of the two great sects were taking big and vicious, the muscles on their faces started to rot!

It started to drop off their faces.

One elder of Sunlight Sect only said, "It is just a vow. It means nothing. I will never let go of this hatred! There is a long time ahead, we will meet again in the future!"

While he said the word hatred, his nose had fallen down. While he said "a long time", his ears dropped down. While he said "will", his eyeballs fell off! While he said his last words, his lips dropped to the floor.

There was only a head without skin talking on his shoulder! It was still making sounds!

What surprised them the most was that even though his body was rotting, he didn't notice it!

He just kept swearing and threatening viciously...

Not only him, the others of the two great sects were doing the same thing.

While they were talking, the muscles dropped off their bones.

When the muscles and skins hit the floor, they became a pile of blood.

Even the clothes were rotting. There was no muscles or hair on their bodies. It rotted like hell, and even their organs were all gone.

Only sixty-three sets of empty bones remained there!

They were like dead bodies that had been in the tombs for hundreds of years, but still able to stand up!

Chapter 480: No Blood on Weapon

Such weird scene could scare some coward men to death even if it was shown in daytime!

Luckily, everybody, including Wan Zhenghao, had seen much death in their lives. They were all scared though; they felt cold, and they shivered in fright.

They couldn't even say a complete sentence.

The next moment, those men stopped talking.

Silence defeated the sound. Everything was deep inside everybody's mind now!

Sixty-three good cultivators of the two great sects, hmm, good bones of the cultivators, stood in the yard quietly.

They stopped breathing now.

They didn't know what happened to them till they died. They didn't even know they were already dead.

They just lost their lives in such a silent way.

- Splash... -

- Splash... -

As the wind blew over, the bones fell apart to the floor. As the wind blew again, they all became ashes!

The ashes covered the floor and some were blown up flying in the air.

To become skeletons was not their end. Their end was to become ashes!

People thought a living man turning into a pile of ashes was just a story. It turned out it was something that would really happen!

Whoever had seen this all felt it hard to believe. They kept swallowing. Their necks were moving, and they felt like their hearts were going to stop beating.

"Pahhh... Pahh..." Wan Zhenghao couldn't stand it anymore. He started to throw up like crazy, causing him to feel dizzy and weak. He nearly puked out his gallbladder..

What happened today had truly frightened the shxt out of him.

In fact, he shouldn't be weak like this, as he had lived for a thousand years. However, too many things happened in one day. Happy, sad, worried, scared, frightened... One after another, he

couldn't handle it anymore!

"Pah... Pahhhh..." Some of the people of the five clans started to throw up.

After what happened, they were going to lose their desire for food in the coming several months for sure.

Long Tianyun and his people were standing there looking at Feng Monarch's back. They were scared and also extremely admiring!

Even if they saw a real demon eating a living man, it wouldn't be as horrible as this!

After this, the men of the five clans would surely treat Feng Zhiling like they had treated Bu Jingtian! Even kids didn't dare to cry out because they feared Feng Monarch!

For the five clans, Feng Monarch had become someone more scary and powerful than the House of the Chaotic Storms!

Much more horrible!

Ye Xiao stood there looking at those men coldly. He saw them turning into dead men from living men, and then turning into ashes blown away by wind. He was calm and peaceful during the whole time.

After a while, he coldly smiled. "My dan beads are not so good to swallow. Do you really think I would set you free? Do you think I was really that naive to give you the dan beads? After all the days you have been through in this martial world, you actually had such naive thought... Now who is the naive one... I would like to give you one last word. Unqualified! You are unqualified to be bad guys!"

Everybody alive felt cold on the back.

It turned out... Feng Monarch had never planned to let those guys go!

Whatever he had done was to cover his true intents.

The poison beads were powerful.

However, they couldn't kill those superior cultivators fast enough. They still had the power to attack. Even though they had about twenty percent of their power, when they struck at the same time, it was strong enough to kill anybody in the world!

Feng Monarch wanted them to die, but he couldn't face that final strike from those desperate men. That was why he acted like he wanted to show mercy. He talked like he needed those men to put down the hatred and become friends to him. That was only to make them believe the dan beads were real.

Those men never knew that those dan beads were some even

more horrible poison beads!

This kind of effect only took place when those horrible poison beads were swallowed. That was why Feng Monarch did so much to make them eat them. And then it was the end!

Those who swallowed them died!

Sixty-three Sky Origin cultivators died in their own nagging, turning into a pile of ashes!

[What was that poison?

Why is it so overwhelming and vicious? Feng Zhiling, is he a master dan-maker or a master poison-maker? Or is he a master in both?!!]

Long Tianyun took in a deep breath. He wanted to take some fresh air. When he breathed, however, he realized that there must be those ashes in the air.

Thinking about that, he felt like puking again. It was rolling in his stomach.

He tried so hard not to puke out, but his face turned pale because of it.

He was a man with schemes too. However, he couldn't help but

ask himself, [If I were one of those men...]

[If I got hit by that horrible poison and I was dying, when I had a dan bead that was said to cure me...

Would I eat it or not?]

Long Tianyun felt scared when he thought about it.

He could only have one answer. [Yes!] He would definitely eat it! He would snatch it badly!

Even if he knew that it could be another poison bead, he would still swallow it!

If he didn't, he would lose the only possibility to survive. He would definitely die.

However, those men only died faster and in a worse way!

They died in a more horrible way!

When a man was about to die, he would only choose what was possible to save him. He wouldn't think of other things.

Feng Monarch knew so well about people's minds!

He had just said something, in fact, he didn't even need to use weapons! A bunch of powerful enemies died within a while!

Turned into ashes!

It wasn't the poison that killed those men... It was Feng Monarch's scheme! He could kill anybody he wanted!

The two great sects were powerful indeed, but this time, they lost sixty-four master cultivators which included Bu Jingtian. They were seriously damaged!

There was something glowing among the ashes on the floor.

As wind blew over, something showed up.

A mass of dan clouds flew in the air. Splendid!

"Supreme dan bead!" Long Tianyun directly looked at it.

Chapter 481: I Don't Want It!

That was right. That shiny thing was a pile of supreme dan beads. There were about forty beads in the ashes on the floor! They were shining with splendid glow, with beautiful clouds floating.

The two great sects didn't get any supreme dan beads in the auction. How come they had so many supreme dan beads with them?

Ye Xiao stared at the dan beads on the floor and blandly spoke, "Nothing to be surprised. I think these dan beads are from the other three noble clans. Now, as the supreme dan beads are all here, those men of the other three noble clans are either dead or have given in their dan beads by themselves."

Long Tianyun swallowed and softly spoke, "Mu Clan? Gongsun Clan?"

Ye Xiao blandly smiled. "It is too obvious. These dan beads are, although in Ling-Bao Hall now, we have already sold them. I won't take it back like this. Master Long, if you like, you can just take them. I won't mind."

Long Tianyun kept swallowing. He looked at the supreme dan beads among the bone ashes.

[Should I pick them up? Should I take them?]

Everybody had thought about it.

People all loved supreme dan beads. However... Those were marvelous dan beads indeed, but to pick them up from that poisonous ashes... and eat them? Who dared?

"We are grateful for your kindness, Monarch. However, Long Clan wouldn't take these dan beads..." Long Tianyun shook his head. "If any of the other clans want it, feel free to take them... I won't mind. Ahhh... I give up..."

Long Tianyun couldn't hold the writhe in his stomach anymore. He threw up badly.

Those of the other clans looked at those dan beads like they were looking at a ghost. They swallowed with pale faces, and then they threw up too.

[Pick them up?]

[Eat them?]

They started to throw up after just glancing at them.

"We don't want it... Pahh..."

"Me neither... Pahhh..."

"No... Pahh..."

The supreme dan beads were shining with an attractive glow staying in the bone ashes that hadn't been blown away by the wind. The entire martial world had been fighting for them. Now, they were just lying there, with ashes, but nobody wanted to touch them.

That was... Really no one dared to take them after seeing how a bunch of living men turned into ashes.

The supreme dan beads in the ashes, nobody dared to touch them, not to mention to eat them.

Nobody knew if there was any poison on those dan beads.

As long as there was the possibility, no matter how bold these men were, they wouldn't dare to try it!

Apparently, for the people of the five clans, it wasn't worth doing it at all!

Ye Xiao looked at the supreme dan beads in the flying ashes, then he spoke with a low voice, "The threats from the two sects are dismissed at one time today. I think we can live some peaceful days from now on."

And then he blandly smiled. He turned around and walked into the room. He was casual and peaceful.

Whoever heard what he just said couldn't help twitching their faces.

[Threats?]

[Who dares to threaten you from now on?]

[All the assassins of the world came mess with you. They came for your head, but you killed almost four thousand of them. That is fine. Those who killed will get killed at the end anyway. But the rest of those assassins gave up. They even became your men who go out to kill for you now.]

[The two sects sent their men under the lead of Bu Jingtian, the No. 1 Cultivator in the world. That was sixty-three great cultivators. They came with fury, but within such a short time, you killed them all! They even turned into ashes!]

[After what you did, how do they dare to mess with you again? Who on earth dares to mess with you from now on?]

[Sunlight Sect and Starlight Sect must hate you so much, but after what you did to show your true power, your dan-making capability, and your poison capability, they will have to reconsider again and again if they want to get to you again!]

"Feng Monarch has shocked the entire world today. I believe from now on, Ling-Bao Hall will be the place no assassins dare to

get in! It will become the place that frightens everybody in the martial world."

Long Tianyun stayed after Ye Xiao left and spoke with emotion, "I can see that the future of the entire world will be changed for you, Monarch."

"Oh?" Ye Xiao didn't even look back to him. He just blandly spoke, "Master Long, don't you think that I won by only using the poison? That I played a scheme? That I don't deserve the victory?"

Long Tianyun laughed and said, "Only the one who survives wins! I don't care what you used. As long as it works, it is good. In other words, I don't think there is anybody else who could use that poison as well as you did. I never knew that you are not only a master dan-maker, but also a master poison-maker."

"That is your power. That is what you have to shock the world!" Long Tianyun did admire Feng Monarch very much!

Besides, he had a thought. [From now on, no matter what happens, we, Long Clan will never! Ever! Be against Feng Monarch! He is much better a friend to us than an enemy! To be his enemy means death!]

[This man, he is so vicious... so mean... so brutal!]

"Don't be too optimistic. I don't think the two sects will just let this go." Ye Xiao thought and spoke, "We need to be on guard

against them."

"You killed Bu Jingyun by one hit. Those men of the two sects mean nothing to you. You don't need to worry at all." Long Tianyun wasn't trying to kiss his ass. He was just telling his true feeling.

To kill Bu Jingtian in one hit!

Even those who were in the same level with Bu Jingtian, those super powerful cultivators couldn't do it.

Feng Monarch had such power, and he also had the dan beads and poison beads. Nobody in the world could stop him!

Ye Xiao didn't answer. He walked ahead a few steps and then stopped. He turned around.

Those of the five clans who had been following him also stopped. They looked at Feng Monarch, but didn't dare to say anything first.

Feng Zhiling glanced at their faces and spoke in a low voice, "I heard that Ling-Bao Hall's business is being resisted all over the world..."

He sounded peaceful, but what he said meant a lot.

There was a warm smile on his face too.

Chapter 482: Coming in Waves

The men of the five clans trembled the moment they saw his smile. Long Tianyun sweated on the forehead as he hurriedly said, "No. That's impossible... How could that happen? Absolutely not. Nothing like that at all!"

The men of the five clans all had the same thought. [When we return to our clans, we should gather all the members and unseal all the restraint against Ling-Bao Hall.]

[No. That's not enough. We should treat every Ling-Bao Hall's branch like they are our ancestors. That should be enough.]

[No matter what Ling-Bao Hall will do, they are right. Even if they truly do something wrong, they are still right. We just cannot offend them!]

[We cannot displease the monarch of Ling-Bao Hall.]

[If Feng Monarch get enraged, he only needs to point out the name of one clan, and all the assassins in the world will go start the killing...]

[We could be wiped out within seconds!]

That wasn't an exaggeration. That was the truth.

That was real!

Ye Xiao blandly nodded and said, "Oh. Is that it? I can be released then. I was thinking... after all this ends in the capital, I will go to every branch in the world and see what difficulty they have. And I will solve them one by one myself. If there is nothing serious, I will take it as a tour. I have been busy worrying for such a long time. I wonder if I can have a good time when I go see my branches..."

The men behind him were all sweating.

[My bloody god. That is... If he comes to our place and finds out that... we have been suppressing their business... Will we be able to live on anymore?]

[He wants to have a tour... I am afraid it is a tour of killing. Maybe he will just slaughter all the way along or poison the hell out of all of us?]

[Please visit any place you want. Just don't... don't come to our place! When I get back... No, before I get back, now, I will send a message to my clan to unseal the restraint. I am going to cooperate with Ling-Bao Hall in all possible aspects...]

[No, I don't think it is enough to only admit them right even when they are wrong. We should just give them money. That would be much obvious. That will definitely satisfy this god of slaughter!]

[Now we know the situation clearly. We should be extremely cautious when we deal with Ling-Bao Hall. Any mistake will lead us to hell.]

While these people were lost in their own imagination, the supreme dan beads in the ashes started to jump. They gradually flew up in the air with strange clouds.

They saw it, and they knew something was going to happen. They looked around and found nothing else went wrong!

After a while, a clear voice came from the sky, "These supreme dan beads, since Feng Monarch doesn't want them, why don't I just take them?"

Ye Xiao was shocked.

He had felt that somebody was watching him. It was such a weak feeling, and no matter what he did, he just couldn't find out who was watching. The only thing he could be sure was that this man was much more powerful than Bu Jingtian, the so-called No. 1 Cultivator!

That man was too strong. He was way above Bu Jingtian in cultivation. Even in Ye Xiao's previous life, he hadn't seen anyone whom he felt was stronger than this man. Surely, the secret beauty who took away Su Yeyue in this life was an exception. This man who had been hiding was stronger than he could ever imagine. However, he was not as strong as that secret beauty though!

Now, this horribly strong figure was going to show himself.

Ye Xiao turned slowly around. He saw the yard become clear and clean, with the ashes and blood completely disappearing.

A young man dressed in cyan casually stood in the yard with a smile on his face.

In his hand, there were the dozens of supreme dan beads. They were shining with colorful glow. The dan clouds on them were still splendid.

At the moment, this cyan clothes young man was looking at Ye Xiao, smiling.

- Shoot! Shoot! -

After the sounds, two more figures showed up.

Two ladies, both were beautiful and elegant.

Ye Xiao stared at them and murmured, "Wan of the Clouds... Xiu of the Heavens!"

The men of the five clans heard the names. They staggered and nearly fell to the floor! They only felt buzzing in their heads and weak on their legs.

Wan of the Clouds, Xiu of the Heavens.

Wan of the Clouds on the left, Xiu of the Heavens on the right. They waved their hand and summoned the wind; they stretched their arms and controlled the heaven and earth!

[Master Bai, House of the Chaotic Storms!]

[Wan of the Clouds and Xiu of the Heavens showed up. This young man between them, is he Master Bai, the man who had been famous but hiding for centuries?]

Everybody sighed.

[This Feng Monarch really... is good at messing with powerful ones!

Such a trouble maker!]

[First, it was the assassins from all over the world coming to kill him. And then the two great sects came to take his life. After all the efforts... the two waves are solved. Now... The most horrible force in the Land of Han-Yang, the House of the Chaotic Storms actually came to him too. The three stunning great figures showed up at the same time! What the hell!]

One wave after another. One wave higher than another. Every wave seemed to be the most chaotic one. When the next wave came, it turned out to be more chaotic!

[You casually and easily took care of the assassins. You defeated the two great sects with tiny efforts. However, you are facing the House of the Chaotic Storms. What could you do?]

"May I ask, who this is..." Ye Xiao frowned and walked towards them. He was neither arrogant nor humble. He just asked.

"My name is Ling." Ling Wuxie raised his eyebrow and smiled in a wicked way.

He casually shrugged, exactly like a dandiacal man.

Chapter 483: Upset Ling Wuxie

Wan-Er and Xiu-Er were speechless. They really wanted to say that they didn't know this man, and they even thought they should at least make it clear that they didn't know him that well. However, they didn't have time for that really. They slightly bowed and said, "Wan of the Clouds/Xiu of the Heavens, with regards. It has been a while. Monarch, you are still elegant. Greetings."

Ye Xiao was shocked. He loudly spoke, "Ladies, no need to be too polite. Please, come in. Brother Ling, please."

He figured out something immediately.

These three were not here to make troubles. They even needed his help this time.

Wan-Er's and Xiu-Er's greeting showed Ye Xiao the truth. Ye Xiao put down all the apprehension and acted casual and polite.

The men of the five clans were completely astonished. They really didn't know what to say now. Some of them even sat down on the floor with a weird face.

They couldn't believe what they saw.

They couldn't believe what they heard!

Wan of the Clouds, Xiu of the Heavens, the two ladies who were controlling the fate of the kingdoms in the world, actually so politely greeted Feng Monarch?

They even sounded so... humble!

[That...]

[What was that!]

It truly overturned people's mind!

Ye Xiao said, "Wan Zhenghao, when you're done throwing up, just take our friends from the five clans to your room. Me and these three guests have something important to talk about."

Apparently he was saying "We need to have some serious conversation. Get off now you small figures."

It sounded soft, yet it was totally an order for them to leave.

None of those men felt humiliated. They accepted it as a right thing to do!

[It is an honor to be called small figures in front of Wan of the Clouds and Xiu of the Heavens!]

[When people in your levels are having a conversation, we would never get involved even if we are asked to. We don't have tough hearts to bear that pressure... Maybe just a word you say can scare the hell out of us...]

At the moment, they truly realized that they were too far from the league of Feng Monarch.

[Even Wan of the Clouds and Xiu of the Heavens would greet him humbly... No wonder the House of the Chaotic Storms would support Ling-Bao Hall at the auction. This is why.]

[I guess Feng Monarch could totally drive away the two great sects back then, even without the help from the House of the Chaotic Storms. That is the truth. Everyone knows it now!]

When they walked out the yard, they still felt their hearts beating fast. They still felt like a dream.

[What I saw... Is it real?]

...

Ye Xiao led the three people to his room. He noticed something.

This mysterious Lord Ling, no matter where he walked over, it would become clear and clean immediately. On the floor or on the wall, wherever he passed, it became so clean. It was even cleaner than a new house. Nothing was cleaner than that.

When Ye Xiao took out some tea leaves, he could feel the leaves shaking in his hand. The tiny dirt on the leaves disappeared.

Ling didn't move a bit. At least, he didn't look like moving at all!

[This man is actually this marvelous!]

[He is so powerful in cultivation. That is obvious. But he is also such a stickler for cleanliness. Does he really need to be like this?] Ye Xiao praised and also complained.

However, he knew how difficult it was to do that silently.

He couldn't do that now. Even when he was Xiao Monarch in his previous life, he couldn't do it.

"I guess you must have something to talk, as you three came together?" Ye Xiao spoke while he was making the tea.

The maids in Ling-Bao Hall were sent away because Ye Xiao didn't want more people to get hurt in this chaos. Only assassins were left in Ling-Bao Hall, but he couldn't ask an assassin to serve the guests. It wouldn't bring any discomfort to the three guests, but the assassin would easily get suppressed, and it would become difficult for them to make any progress in cultivation in the future.

That was why Ye Xiao had to do it himself.

No more than five people in the universe for whom Ye Xiao had ever made tea himself, including these three!

"I am good. I just came to watch a wonderful play here. It would be better if I can make a new friend here." Ling Wuxie giggled. He lied down on the chair and said, "The two ladies are here for some real business."

Ye Xiao clearly saw it this time. When Lord Ling sat on the chair, the dirt on the chair was all gone. Ye Xiao had a pair of sharp eyes, yet he couldn't see where the dirt went.

He twitched his lips when he saw it so closely.

[He really is unbelievably strong. There truly is no limit in the universe. Knowledge is infinite.]

Ling Wuxie was a bit upset. He had thought that Feng Zhiling couldn't solve the dangerous situation earlier.

He had planned that when Feng Monarch was in danger, he could show up and save him. He could have saved Feng Monarch from the chaos, so that he could show off his marvelous martial arts. After that, he would be more important for Feng Monarch...

However, unexpectedly, since he came, he had been just watching a play from the beginning to the end.

Wave after wave came during the play, yet Feng Zhiling solved everything one by one by himself. Ling Wuxie didn't have a chance to show off at all.

Feng Monarch had taken care of everything.

Lord Ling, who wanted to be a savior this time, felt upset, because reality didn't leave him a chance to show off.

He was so upset that there was no chance to make Feng Monarch owe him a favor.

Chapter 484: Who?

"Lady Wan-Er? Lady Xiu-Er? What is it that you want from me?" Ye Xiao turned to them and looked at them.

Wan-Er and Xiu-Er both had complicated thoughts. They didn't know what to say.

They truly didn't know... how to ask!

They were actually enemy to Feng Monarch. Feng Zhiling and Master Bai were life-or-death opponents. Their thoughts were completely at opposite sides. The House of the Chaotic Storms had been occupying the upper position, and Feng Monarch didn't even have the power to fight back.

He just kept struggling to survive in this chaos.

Sometimes, when the two ladies saw Feng Monarch struggling, they felt good.

However, it was a different story now.

They were still in a higher position, but they now had to ask him for a big favor! No one else in the universe could offer what they needed, but only this man!

Their former plan was totally cracked. They had to give it up.

What they were planning to do before was totally a farce compared to the current situation. Useless farce.

In the farce, they messed up with a man they shouldn't have.

Now, this man was the only one that could give them what they wanted.

The old sayings, things turned over within thirty years was right. However, it hadn't been thirty years to make it change this time, had it?

After a while, Wan-Er smiled and said, "Feng Monarch, don't mention it. We are here today for..."

She paused. Things were clear. She was here to ask for help, however, she just couldn't be brazenfaced to ask.

For a great long time, the House of the Chaotic Storms had never begged for help.

[What should I say? How?

I... I don't have that experience!]

Ling Wuxie's eyes flashed. Apparently, he noticed something. He loudly laughed and fervidly spoke, "Come on. You guys know each

other for some time. I am a stranger. I like Feng Monarch a lot. I want to make friends with you. Let me introduce myself. My name, is Ling Wuxie."

Ye Xiao smiled and said, "I am flattered. But... Brother Ling, no offense, but I don't seem... to have any impression about your name. Surely, I am not a well informed person. I should have known your name."

Ling Wuxie twitched on the mouth, and then loudly laughed. "Not at all. If you did hear about me, that would be weird... You are from down here. I won't blame that. I am from up there. Hahahaha..."

[What? Down here? Up there...]

Wan-Er and Xiu-Er were speechless again.

They looked at Lord Ling, who was talking big and showing off. For the first time, they felt that maybe it was a good thing to have a shameless guy like him around. At least, he could break a deadlock situation through his shamelessness.

Deadlock didn't mean a thing to Lord Ling, who was brazenfaced!

"Down here? Up there..." Ye Xiao's face twitched. [That has different meanings.] He thought for a while and smiled, "Oh, Brother Ling, you are from Human Realm Upon Heavens. Respect."

Ling Wuxie suddenly opened his mouth wide. He slapped on the chair, thumbed up and said, "Brother Feng is such a wise man with pretty heart. We both know there is barely anyone in this world who knows about Human Realm Upon Heavens..."

Ling Wuxie was truly surprised.

Human Realm Upon Heavens was not just one or two level higher than Land of Han-Yang. It was so many levels higher... Basically, natives in Land of Han-Yang shouldn't know about it.

[How does Feng Monarch know about it? Does he have any special background?]

Ling Wuxie was surprised. Ye Xiao and the two ladies were speechless. [What is wrong with Ling Wuxie? Can he even talk properly? Wise man with pretty heart? Is it good say that?]

Wan and Xiu thought more about it. [Ling Wuxie isn't '[Wuxie](#)' at all. He is real wicked. What he said made Feng Zhiling like a ragtag, although he is indeed from down realm!]

"Hmm. It is a coincidence. I have a friend who was taken away by a master cultivator to Human Realm Upon Heavens." Ye Xiao was feeling upset, but when he thought of Su Yeyue's lovely face, he felt better. However, he sighed.

[Little girl, how are you?]

"Urh? A master cultivator? Took away?" Ling Wuxie was surprised.

"Yes. My friend became that master cultivator's disciple. She must be cultivating in Human Realm Upon Heavens right now." Ye Xiao nodded.

"I wonder... Who took her away? Do you know his name, Brother Feng?" Ling Wuxie was surprised.

Ling Wuxie had to ask. He was so curious about who could shuttle between the two realms like he did.

He came to Land of Han-Yang in a secret way. It really took him lots of efforts.

To bring a person back... he was totally unable to do that! Only... Only those few guys! However, he couldn't believe that those people would come to this low realm.

[Those people, if they come to this realm, the entire land will be broken when they just wave their hands. This realm cannot take their power!]

"Name? That master said..." Ye Xiao frowned and thought. He said with uncertainty, "She said her name was... something like... Meng Huaiqing? "

"Meng Huaqing... What... Meng Huaqing?" Ling Wuxie opened his mouth wide. He stared at Ye Xiao. Suddenly, he was stunned.

He was stunned by the name!

[That is... That is astonishing!]

[My god... That was... the Heaven Queen!]

[Scared the shxt out of me!]

[Feng Monarch's friend become a disciple of the Heaven Queen of Human Realm Upon Heavens?]

Ling Wuxie only felt dizzy and swollen in his head. He couldn't believe such thing had actually happened. However, if it wasn't true, how would Feng Monarch know about the name Meng Huaqing?

Meng Huaqing of Human Realm Upon Heavens!

[Wait! Meng Huaqing is that man's mother!!]

[What the hell! Breaking news! I am sweating!]

Wan-Er and Xiu-Er also opened their red little mouths... That was... really too much!

[Isn't she Master's mother...]

...

Wuxie 无邪 means 'have no wicked thoughts'.

Chapter 485: Stunned!

"What? Is Master Meng famous in Human Realm Upon Heavens?" Ye Xiao surprisedly asked, "I see your faces. I guess Master Meng should be... well known?"

Ye Xiao thought that the more famous Meng Huaiqing was, the better for him! Of course he did!

The more fame she had, the higher position she must have in that realm. That meant that little girl should have a more powerful support.

[Famous?]

[Well-Known?]

Ling Wuxie kept his eyes and mouth opened. Eventually, he took in a deep breath. Before he could produce a proper word, he coughed heavily.

"Couggggghhhh... Cough, cough... Couggghhhhhh... Cough..." He coughed so hard like the world was going to turn into darkness. Even with his great cultivation capability, his coughs caused his snot and tears to come out.

The reason was simple... It was just...

[She is the Queen! Don't you think she should be famous?]

[She is more than famous! She is super beyond famous!]

[She is the wife of the man who is one of the Dominators!]

[Well-known?]

[She is more than that! She is Bai Chen's mother! Meng Wuzhen's aunt!]

[East Heaven King's daughter-in-law! West Heaven King's sister!]

[Is she famous enough for you now?]

[No one in the universe dares to mess with Meng Huaiqing! Maybe there is somebody who dares to mess with East Heaven King, but no one dares to mess with the two kings!]

[No one could make them fight together! Except her!]

[Don't doubt it! If Meng Huaiqing is bullied, or something bad happens to her, the two kings would never hesitate. They won't mind working together with each other in that case. They would only think about how to torture the man who dares to mess with the lady...]

[This lady is the true untouchable figure in the entire universe!]

[Feng Monarch actually spoke her name so casually...]

[Do you dare to be more casual than this? Do you?]

Suddenly, the only thing Ling Wuxie felt was urgent urination because of the shock... [What the hell. I never knew there is such a dangerous situation behind all this. Should I go? That would be betraying my friend though...]

[If someday the Queen knows that I did something here, she wouldn't need to do anything but just tell my dad... My dad would definitely hang me... That is the best consequence!]

[This is too dangerous!]

[I am scared!]

"Feng Monarch... You don't know... That Master Meng... Cough..." Ling Wuxie kept rolling his eyes as he slapped his chest and said, "In Human Realm Upon Heavens... She is a powerful figure... Nobody dares to mess with her... Cough..."

Ye Xiao felt relieved to hear what Ling Wuxie said. He relaxed, then he said, "I feel good to hear that. I kept worrying that my friend would get bullied up there..."

Ling Wuxie coughed. Snot and tears were out again. He nearly put out his tongue.

[I really don't know how to respond.]

[Isn't it too freaking powerful!]

[Who dares to bully the disciple of the Queen?]

[Everybody knows that the Queen has been searching for so many years just to find a proper disciple she likes... Now, she finally has one, that girl must be the most valuable person in her eyes!]

[How would the Queen let anybody bully her girl?]

[Even me and Meng Wuzhen and seven or eight other cultivators together... we couldn't even think about messing with her...]

[If we did... I guess we would be skinned off thoroughly.]

[That is a best situation!]

[If that girl bullies others, the Queen would very likely be happy to see it. After all, she is always good at bullying!]

Ye Xiao half closed his eyes and spoke, "Hmmm... Such a realm upon heavens... Realm beyond heavens..." He kept his eyes half

closed, seemingly lost in thoughts. He looked so solemn.

[A world upon heavens... Even though it is several realms away, I will eventually break up into it!]

[Definitely!]

[I will see what real dominators under the firmament look like... If I can have a fight with them... then I will have no regrets in my life!]

[If I can win that fight, that would be even better!]

He thought of it, but didn't speak it out.

If Ling Wuxie knew what he was thinking, especially the last part, he would very possibly spit on him until he was drowned to death with his hilarious dream!

He might think, [What the hell is wrong with you? Even in dreams, you shouldn't have that thought!]

Nobody talked.

After being shocked by the name, Lord Ling had forgotten what he was here for. He opened his eyes with confusion, then he rolled up his eyes. He kept thinking but got nothing. He asked Xiu-Er, "What did I want to say?"

"..." Xiu-Er looked at him.

[You just asked me... what you wanted to say?]

[Am I a worm in your belly?]

[Stop watching me! You are not that close to me at all! Nor Wan-Er!]

[It must be an embarrassing thing to tell people that I know this guy. No wonder Master has never mentioned this stupid friend!]

"Brother Ling... You said your name is Ling Wuxie," Ye Xiao reminded him with patience.

"That's right. Brother Feng. Oh Brother Feng." Ling Wuxie grabbed his hand and spoke seriously, "Brother Feng, you must remember my name. My name is Ling Wuxie. Ling of Ling Wuxie; Wu of Ling Wuxie; Xie of Ling Wuxie."

Ye Xiao's lips were shaking. [He grabbed my hand? So tight? What the hell is this!]

[Who would introduce himself like this?]

Wan-Er and Xiu-Er lowered their heads.

They both felt so embarrassed!

Chapter 486: We Are Leaving!

They really felt embarrassed by this guy. [How do I live with this... I really don't understand how such a great clan in Human Realm Upon Heavens would give birth to such a... stupid, shameless, wicked, embarrassing man?]

[Why is such a person the only close friend our master have? Where is justice?]

Ling Wuxie didn't feel he had shown enough. He kept grabbing Ye Xiao's hand and wrote on his palm while speaking, "Look, this is Ling... This is my name. Ling Wuxie. You won't make it wrong..."

Ye Xiao felt itchy in his hand. He felt extremely weird about it.

[What the hell. Are you done now? I am a very straight man... You, a man, grabbed my hand, and wrote in my hand?]

[What the...] Ye Xiao felt terrified. He couldn't imagine more about it.

Moreover, he had tried over ten times with great effort to stop Ling Wuxie from grabbing his hand and writing in his hand. He tried every martial art he could, but just couldn't get rid of it!

Ling Wuxie didn't seem to feel anything!

When Ye Xiao looked into the eyes of Ling Wuxie, even though he was a calm and steady man, he was terrified. [This guy... Is he... Is he the type who likes guys? Right. When he first met me, what did he say? He said that he likes Feng Monarch, and he wants to be friends with Feng Monarch! Oh my god!]

Thinking about that, Ye Xiao had goosebumps everywhere. He didn't want to cover it anymore. He just used his other hand to draw his other hand back. Bold as Xiao Monarch, he was terrified this time...

[He has great power and he is horrible in what he likes!]

[Oh my god...]

[Never ever... Never ever let me meet a guy like that, so powerful that I cannot defend myself from him...]

After a while, Lord Ling finally calmed down from the panic. He took up the cup and drank the tea.

He rubbed the mouth and realized that he didn't clean the cup with his martial art. However, he didn't care anymore. Things could be much worse than this anyway!

He had to be scared. Every time he saw the Queen, he would be given a "lesson". The Queen would say, 'Why is my son's close friend such a prick! Somebody come and take him out to learn some manners already!'

When he thought of the words she said, he felt terrified.

Manner lessons were difficult to bear... Dozens of teachers would stay around him and keep talking to him! If he failed to learn... He would have to keep learning for dozens of years, hundreds of years...

Ling Wuxie would cry if he could.

When he looked at Ye Xiao again and found that he was strange, he realized something. He laughed and then politely spoke, "I thought of something in the past. Brother Feng, forgive me. I forgot myself..."

Ye Xiao gave a hollow laugh and waved his hand. "Never mind. Never mind."

Ling Wuxie smiled and then rubbed his head. He felt embarrassed like there was a nail under his butt. Suddenly, he became solemn as he asked, "Brother Feng, I have a question."

Ye Xiao said, "Hmm?"

"What do you say... That No. 1 Cultivator..." When Ling Wuxie said 'No. 1', he couldn't help twitching the lips. "That No. 1 Cultivator, Bu Jingtian, he should be strong enough to break up to the upper realm long time ago, but he didn't leave this world. Can you tell me more about it?"

He fervently looked at Ye Xiao.

In fact, it was a test.

Ye Xiao was casual. "That is simple. He was afraid of death. That is all!"

"If he wasn't, he should have left this realm a long time ago. Because he loves his life too much that he couldn't take any risk, he didn't seize opportunities. He just couldn't take the step ahead! That is all." Ye Xiao said, "Even though he was getting stronger and stronger, he was getting more and more cowardly. As time went on, he lost all the hopes. He didn't even try it. How could he break through the boundary."

"Excellent!" Ling Wuxie praised. He laid back and lied on the chair, then he said, "I have finished what I want to say. Now, go on with your conversation. Don't mind me. Just ignore me."

Wan of the Clouds and Xiu of the Heavens were both speechless.

Ye Xiao too.

They looked at each other. They didn't know what to say about this weird man. He could totally drive a healthy man crazy.

He just forcibly brought in a topic he wanted to talk and talked a

lot himself. When he finished, he just left.

He left the others there feeling blank and stupid.

The two ladies and Ye Xiao looked at each other. They all knew what each other thought about that. They only smiled helplessly.

When they smiled to each other, the embarrassing situation was broken.

That was such a great contribution Ling Wuxie brought to the ladies. Even though he didn't do it on purpose, he did it anyway!

"Feng Monarch, I have something that I need to tell you formally." Xiu of the Heavens smiled and said, "From now on, the House of the Chaotic Storms will retreat from Land of Han-Yang forever. There will be no more House of the Chaotic Storms anymore!"

Ye Xiao was shocked. He looked up and stared at Xiu of the Heavens, then spoke with astonishment, "Oh?"

Wan-Er looked at him softly and said, "That's right. No more House of the Chaotic Storms. Collapsing kingdoms are behind the day now."

Ye Xiao took a long breath and said, "That is such great thing for the entire Land of Han-Yang, the kingdoms in it and all the livings."

"However, there is something we need you to do for our retreat." Xiu of the Heavens smiled and said.

"Me? You need my help? Why so?" Ye Xiao frowned.

He would never think that the House of the Chaotic Storms would need his help to end their craziness.

However, it was certainly not that easy to just retreat. He was afraid what they needed him to do wasn't easy at all!

"What can I do to help? If Master Bai and the two ladies are unable to do it, even if I truly want to, I am afraid there is little I can help," Ye Xiao asked; he didn't understand the situation at all.

Chapter 487: Need Your Help!

"Heh, heh... Here's the thing... Basically... Well..." Wan of the Clouds decided to just say it directly. "We are tired about cycling chaotic times. We decided to go back to Human Realm Upon Heavens. We won't stay here anymore."

Ye Xiao's eyes flashed as he said, "Hmm? Oh?"

He seemed to understand it after what Wan of the Clouds said.

"The reason why we can live here like normal persons, is that we are doomed by divine punishment. Our bodies... are restrained." Xiu of Heavens slowly spoke, "If we can't break the restraint, we can't leave here. Without our real cultivation capability, we won't be able to leave."

"No matter which realm we want to go, when we are breaking through the bounds, we need great power to protect us. That's the only way to open the gate to the Chaos Tunnel..." Wan of the Clouds said.

"With our current capability, we cannot break it on our own."

"We want to leave once and for all, but only when the restraints are removed can we leave safely. That is where we need your help."

"There is only one person in the firmament who have the chance to successfully make that thing we need."

"You, Feng Monarch."

The two ladies talked and talked before finally explaining it all.

Ye Xiao was enlightened; he asked, "Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan?"

The ladies nodded at the same time. "That's right. Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan. It is the only thing that can deal with the divine reverse impact in the history."

Ye Xiao thought and said, "In fact, you don't need to come and tell me this. I have a deal with your master after all. I will make a Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan bead for him. I will keep that in mind, and I will finish it before they're due."

Xiu of the Heavens spoke in a heavy voice, "Our Master surely trusts you. However, things have changed. When Master and you made the deal, we didn't plan to leave Land of Han-Yang yet. We only needed one dan bead for our master. However, it is far less than what we need now."

Ye Xiao was shocked. "You want more?"

"Yes." Wan of Clouds frowned. She counted and said, "We need one bead for Master to recover his capability to move. Two dan beads will be better and safer though. However, the problem is, to recover his cultivation capability, even twenty dan beads are not

enough! Besides, we two also need some. This time, the Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan we need are more than... fifty!"

"Fifty?" Ye Xiao exclaimed. He stood up, totally astonished. "You must be kidding me, ladies?"

He then saw their serious faces. He realized that they were not joking! They really needed... fifty Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan beads!

"Impossible!"

Ye Xiao didn't even think about it but just declined it. He spoke furiously, "Is Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan like cabbage to you? Do you think I can get it by only waving my hands? What a bloody whimsicality! You don't know the complexity about it. Fine. I understand. But I have told your master about the risk I need to take. I told him how difficult to make it succeed. Let alone fifty, I won't be able to make even five for you. There is nothing to negotiate about on this."

"We can pay whatever you ask. You can ask for anything as exchange. Let's just talk about it," Wan of the Clouds spoke with a low voice.

"Do you think I am bargaining? Even if you can give me the entire world, I will never give you fifty Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan beads!" Ye Xiao shook his head. "Fifty Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan beads? Why don't you just chop off my head? That would be easier for me! If there is nothing else you want here, please leave

now. Go back to your master and have a good talk with him. Tell him to think about it. Tell him to think wisely about it."

"Feng Monarch, please think about it. As long as you give us enough dan beads, you can ask whatever you want from us," Xiu of the Heavens spoke with sincerity.

"It is never about what I want. It is simply impossible!"

Ye Xiao was angry. "Forget it. I don't care if your master has told you about the complexity in it. I will tell you about it now. Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan is a nature-twisting dan! Every dan bead will bring a horrible divine punishment! Only the punishment for one dan bead can make a big threat to me. I have thought about it. The punishment for one dan bead, I can handle it. I may get seriously hurt, but that's fine. Now you are asking fifty! Let's just leave the succeeding rate aside... Even if I will succeed all the attempts, I should be smashed into ashes for times by then... What dan bead can I make by then?"

[Fifty dan beads? For times?]

Wan of Clouds and Xiu of Heavens both noticed something from the talk. They both lightened up their eyes.

[He sounds like complaining that he is not strong enough to make it. However, not strong enough to make it is much better than having no capability to do it. The latter one means he can never make it. The former one means he can, but only not strong enough to. If we can enhance his power, he may be able to do it!]

[This Feng Monarch... is able to make more than one dan bead.]

Xiu-Er spoke in a low voice, "Please think about it, Feng Monarch. We are here with great sincerity. We know your feelings to this world. You really want to save the kingdom, the world and the people... We admire you truly. Such a heroic man."

"We won't be against you if we don't have to. An opportunity has shown. We can both ease peacefully..."

"If you don't help us, we will have to stay here. We will keep making that chaotic storms... You won't be happy about that, will you? But if you will help us and send us away, you will save the world..."

Xiu of the Heavens said, "So please, Feng Monarch. Just think about it. Just think about the connections in it."

She sounded peaceful, calm and gentle. She was also humble.

However, it also sounded like a threat!

Chapter 488: Declined!

What she said was right. If Ye Xiao promised to help, he would save the world. However, if he didn't, it meant whoever the House of the Chaotic Storm killed next was indirectly Feng Zhiling's fault, because he didn't help!

[You say yes, you are the savior; you don't, you are the sinner.

You say yes, we go!

You don't, we keep killing!]

What Xiu-Er said made Ling Wuxie feel surprised. [Oh no...] He thought.

[Oh my god, I thought Bai Chen's two maids are pretty smart. How come they only made things worse? We have been watching Feng Zhiling for such a long time, how could you not know his personality? He is tough outside and soft inside. He will only surrender to sincerity, never be forced by power. What you said will only arouse his rebellious heart. He is such a wise man. If we cannot kill him in an instant, we will have to face a long term revenge from him.]

[Most importantly, you are the one who needs help. How could you even think about threatening this man. A man who is both a master dan-maker and a master poison-maker! Isn't it stupid?]

As Xiu of the Heavens said it, the place fell into silence.

Feng Monarch lowered his head, saying nothing, like he was really having a deep thought.

Even a needle hitting the floor could be heard at the moment.

The awkward silence lasted for a long time.

After a while, Ye Xiao looked up and stared at Xiu of the Heavens. He spoke in a low voice, "Lady Xiu-Er you are overestimating me. Do you really think I care that much? Do you really think I am such a hero?"

He showed a sneer. "The entire House of the Chaotic Storms is overestimating me. Thank you, for raising me up so high. Even though I know you are not praising me, I feel good."

He said he felt good, but he didn't really feel good at all!

Wan of the Clouds realized something was wrong. She hurriedly interrupted, trying to save the situation, "In fact..."

"You are wrong!"

Ye Xiao didn't let her finish. He just decisively said, "You are completely wrong!"

"I am just a boss of a salesroom! I am only an ordinary man!"

"What I care are the people around me. My friends, family, brothers, beloved ones... These are whom I care most. For this world, this country, I do care about it, but not much like you imagine."

"I am not a king here. I have no responsibility to the people here! If I want that responsibility, I will take it. If I don't want to, nobody can put that onto my shoulder!"

"What I have to this world is only some weak feelings! As long as it doesn't go against my will, I will try to protect it!"

"However, if this responsibility is pushed to me, then..." Ye Xiao proudly spoke, "I can abandon it any second!"

[I will take good care of my friends my families. However, I can only keep them safe as long as I am alive.

If I die, it becomes meaningless.]

"Death takes away all. We have to make decisions in our lives. When I cannot hold them all, I will choose some to embrace. When I cannot hold all that I want to choose, I will abandon some. When I don't have anything I can abandon anymore, I can give up on myself. When I am dead, even House of the Chaotic Storms, even Master Bai, no matter how powerful you are, what can you do to threaten a dead man?"

"What you are doing now is exactly pushing to the last step."

Ye Xiao stared at Xiu of the Heavens. A cruel smile showed up on his mouth. He was proud and decisive. "Just go kill everyone. Why do I have to care?"

"To threaten me with all the lives in the world! What a joke!" Ye Xiao loudly laughed. "No matter what you use to threaten me, do you think I am a man that can be threatened? Of course I know that House of the Chaotic Storm can wipe Ling-Bao Hall out easily. Wan and Xiu, you two ladies, can take my life within seconds. You can kill me, you can kill everything around me, but you just cannot threaten me. I am a man who will never surrender to threats!"

Xiu of the Heavens looked upset, and also blank. She didn't dare to say anything.

Wan of the Clouds, who wanted to save the conversation, was unable to say anything now!

Feng Monarch was playing a receptive role in daily life, however, when he was serious, he was tough!

What he said gave everybody a conclusion. [This is a man who can never be threatened!]

He might do as you say if you beg him or give him profits as exchange, but if you want to force him to do something, that is

impossible!

No matter what you do, no matter how you do it, you will never make him surrender!

"Feng Monarch, what is the most important thing in one's life?" Ling Wuxie suddenly asked.

He had to say something to get involved now. Wan and Xiu were both down. If they kept going on it, things would go to a dead end. Ling Wuxie might be like a fool on small things, however, on big issues, he was rather capable in solving problems!

Of course he was. If not, how would Bai Chen treat him like a brother!

"The most important thing is surely oneself!" Ye Xiao coldly said, "I am the one. Only when 'I' exists, things matter! If 'I' is gone, nothing in the world, nothing in the firmament matters. Nothing means anything without 'I'!"

"About 'I', integrity is the most important! My insistence!"

"Do you understand what I said?" Ye Xiao stood up. "I know you are powerful in cultivation. You can turn the world over by waving your hand. However, if you don't want to kill me now, just leave. Please go!"

"As for Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan, I won't give you more than

what I promised!"

He looked rather decisive. He wouldn't leave any space for them to argue.

...

Chapter 489: Threat!

Those were the real thoughts in his heart. He wasn't acting at all.

If one had no dignity and no baseline in his life, his life would be like dead water! One would never find joy in it!

Ye Xiao hated to be threatened the most.

If somebody threatened him to force him to do something he didn't want to, he wouldn't do it. Even if someone threatened him to do something he actually wanted to do, he wouldn't do it either!

[If I want to do it, I will do it! Nobody stops me!

If you dare to force me with threats, I will never do it!

I would rather die!

Do you really think you can threaten me harder than threaten me with my life?]

That was an important aspect of Ye Xiao's personality.

Wan of the Clouds, Xiu of the Heavens, their names were taboos in Land of Han-Yang even Qing-Yun Realm. Ling Wuxie was even ten times more horrible than them. He could destroy the entire land by waving his hands, however, they were urged to leave.

Ling Wuxie was speechless. He didn't know how to save the situation now. Wan-Er and Xiu-Er was totally blank. [Why is he being so mean?]

[We haven't talked about terms. And it is done?]

[It is doomed.]

Xiu of the Heavens was stunned. She kept asking herself. [I haven't said anything aggressive, have I? I just wanted to give a good start in the negotiation. How come it ends up so bad? What is going on? What should I do? I don't want to delay the recovery of Master...]

Wan-Er was calm and smart. She thought for a while and spoke in a low voice, "Maybe Feng Monarch doesn't know yet. A few days earlier, when things were in the worst situation, Xiu-Er returned from the south side. She met a powerful enemy on the way she returned! That was a woman!"

Ye Xiao's face turned cyan. He didn't talk, like he hadn't heard Wan-Er at all.

"It is said that the woman is your lover, Feng Monarch." Wan of Clouds sighed. "I am happy for you. In your life, you can have a woman who would give up everything for you. She knew if she stopped us, no matter what was going to happen, she would suffer misfortunes. Even her sect, her family, and her clan would fall with her. But she still did it. She was determined, because of you."

"It proves his love for you, Feng Monarch. She can do anything for you." Wan of Clouds spoke in a low voice, "That woman is not an ordinary person. If I didn't go help Xiu-Er early, they would both get seriously damaged. We eventually defeated her... Now, she is a guest in House of the Chaotic Storms. She is too powerful. We can't set her free yet."

Ye Xiao's eyes finally flashed.

Wan-Er kept staring at his face as she said, "This poor and sentimental lady is... Bing Xinyue. Feng Monarch, do you know her or not? I wonder if you love each other, or it is just a one-sided affair all along?"

Ye Xiao's face twitched.

"It seems you know this lady. If you promise to help us, we will let Lady Bing-Er back to you! How's that? I think we have shown enough sincerity here!"

"Bing Xinyue..." Ye Xiao lightly spoke.

A sense of confusion flashed over his eyes.

He suddenly felt relieved.

That was right. He had thought about it earlier. If House of the

Chaotic Storm struck with full effort, he very likely would not be able to escape.

That was why he tried everything he could to fulfill the promises he had made before everything happened, including curing Bing Xinyue, and also curing Song Jue...

When he was doing those things, he wanted the peace it brought to him. He didn't want to regret. He never asked for anything as return.

However... Even though Bing Xinyue knew that he was in a very dangerous situation, that he was surrounded by enemies, she just left right after being cured by Ye Xiao. She said nothing and did nothing. She just left...

Ye Xiao didn't feel good about it. He never asked for anything, but he would never feel comfortable to see the one he saved brutally ignore him.

At this moment, he finally found out Bing Xinyue wasn't a cruel person. In fact, she would give up everything to help him!

She didn't even want to let him know.

He was sure if Bing Xinyue stopped Wan of the Clouds and didn't get caught by the two ladies, she would never tell anybody about it. She would keep it a secret to herself forever!

Ye Xiao understood it. [You helped me without asking for return. Then I will help you without telling you about it.]

What a proud and pure-hearted girl!

Now she was captured by House of the Chaotic Storms because of him.

Could he just stand by?

While he felt relieved, he felt pain in the heart too.

His face turned dark. He coldly smiled. "Heh, isn't this another threat? Wan of the Clouds knows how to play schemes so well. You truly opened my eyes today!"

Wan of the Clouds said, "No. Feng Monarch, you are mistaking me. We are just simply telling you this. In fact, you say yes to us or not, we will set Bing-Er free anyway. We are both women. We love somebody. I understand how it feels to be willing to give up everything for the beloved one. We are all women. We have the same feeling. How can we hurt her. We would never use her pure heart to threaten you. It will be staining the purity of it."

"How beautiful your words are! In fact, you are exactly doing it! If I do nothing, won't I be the one who stains the purity of it?" Ye Xiao sharply asked.

Wan-Er didn't say anything. She just sighed, looking regretful.

"Bing Xinyue knows me, because she got a strange disease some time ago, and she nearly lost her life. She only had a few months to live. It is always god's will to let people meet each other. I just do whatever I can to cure her eighty percent!"

Ye Xiao forcibly suppressed down the emotions in his heart. He blandly spoke, "That is why we are just friends. In other words, we are no more than just patient and doctor. Lady Bing feels grateful for what I did for her, so she wants to help me."

...

Chapter 490: Not Giving in to Neither Soft nor Hard Tactics!

"Our relationship is not what you think. It is such a pure and beautiful thing between us. Why do you have to make it sound like she has an affair with me!"

Ye Xiao's eyes were like lightnings that stared at Wan-Er. He spoke in a deep voice, "I saved her life. She knows how to return the favor, so she tried to help me when I am in danger. Even if she dies, she is just giving back the life to me. It is surprising to me, but it is reasonable. Is it really that hard for you to understand it?"

Ye Xiao said so. He sounded the same, but his heart was filled with pain at the moment. It didn't stop. [I... Why would such a pretty girl sacrifice herself to me? She even doesn't want me to know what she would do for me!]

It was a negotiation now. If he lost the initiative, it would be hard to get it back. If he showed even a bit of his true feelings, showing his weak point, Wan and Xiu would get right on it. They would push his bottom line lower and lower, until they could fully exploit him.

Ye Xiao had to be tough. He could not give in any bit. He needed to be cruel and mean. He had to.

"You use her to threaten me. Well, I am still... not going to say yes!"

"She and I, we don't have love. Even if she is my lover, I will not accept what you proposed! Even if I need to watch her die first, or we both die together, I still won't accept it! I will never say yes!"

Ye Xiao's face was cold like iron. His voice was like ice. He sounded determined.

...

Wan and Xiu looked at each other. They both saw the helplessness in each other's eyes.

They truly had no idea how to make this man give in a little bit. They were helpless.

Ling Wuxie seemed casual and said, "I thought you didn't want to even say a word just now. You have even urged us to leave. How come after we mentioned this Bing-Er, you talked so much? Do you still insist in sending us away..."

He clicked his tongue as he said, "I really am interested. I wonder how beautiful and pure-hearted that girl is to make Feng Monarch change his mind like this? I don't think she is going to disappoint me!"

Ye Xiao was surprised. He turned around and stared at Ling Wuxie, with cruelty and coldness in his eyes.

Ling Wuxie was smiling. He nodded and spoke in a casual way, "No offense. I have a shortage. I talk fast."

Ye Xiao blandly spoke, "Never mind. Fast or slow, you will get to know whether I am telling the truth or not. I would talk to you, but that didn't mean I would give in."

He was relaxed now. He spoke in a heavy voice, "What else you want to threaten me with. Go on. I am a bit tired. I need to close my eyes. Please. I will listen to you. I won't stop you. I promise. Just go away when you are done talking. Ling-Bao Hall has sent away all the servants, so we have no food and drink for you. Forgive me."

"I have been busy the whole day. I am exhausted."

Ye Xiao stretched his body when he finished talking. He lied down on the chair and then closed his eyes.

Apparently, he was showing one attitude.

[I don't want to speak, or to listen.]

[You think I have changed my mind because you mentioned Bing Xinyue?]

[Fine. You can go on. Just say whatever you want.]

[I won't interrupt. I will listen. I just won't truly pay attention to it!]

Ling Wuxie realized he was wrong.

After Bing Xinyue was mentioned, Feng Monarch slightly changed his attitude. They seemed to have grasped an opportunity, however, what Ling Wuxie did was wrong. He actually revealed it.

Feng Zhiling was such a tough man!

When Ling Wuxie revealed it all, even if Feng Zhiling was moved, he would stop and play tough again.

Ye Xiao kept his eyes closed as he said, "You have strength, you have energy, you have noble identity, you have power... So you think you can do whatever you want?"

"Do you really think you can control a man by controlling his woman?"

"Do you really think you can threaten all living men by controlling the rise and fall of the world?"

"You are wrong."

"You made it, but you are asking for way too much."

"You want nothing from this world. You care for nothing in this world. The world is turned over. The kingdoms fall, people suffer. You just don't care. That is why you can make it till now."

"But now it is different."

"You need something from me."

"So I won't care about your threats! You either just kill me, or you just play your game yourselves. Just go live your boring lives for maybe thousands or millions of years. Or maybe you can just go away now!"

"I won't make more Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan beads for you. The one I promised you, I won't make it any sooner. Dan-making requires the dan-maker to be calm and peaceful, or else he would definitely fail. No matter how many times he tries, he will fail! I promise, after about seven months, I will take a Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan bead to Master Bai. As for the other beads you want, I suggest you should go ask somebody else's help. I really cannot do anything!"

"Just so you know, I don't surrender to softness nor to hardness. Both softness and hardness, I won't surrender!"

"Please leave now!"

Wan of the Clouds, Xiu of the Heavens and Ling Wuxie didn't know what to say or what to do next!

They knew that this man wouldn't lie, especially on a topic that concerned his own decision. They saw it from how he dealt with those assassins and the people of the two great sects.

However, they didn't know what to do... when they couldn't reach to an agreement on this.

Like Feng Zhiling said, they were the ones who needed help. If Feng Zhiling kept being tough, wouldn't be moved by any means, what could they do?

Wan-Er and Xiu-Er both wanted to sighed. [Why would there be a man with such personality in the world?]

Chapter 491: Sincerity!

Following that, Feng Zhi Ling acted rather excessively—after saying what he had to say, he actually closed his eyes and stopped talking.

He acted like he was going to fall asleep soon.

Wan, Xiu and Ling Wuxie, either of them could smash him to death by waving a hand. However, he just closed his eyes, acted casually while lying in the chair. He simply didn't put anybody in his eyes at all. How arrogant!

[How dare him!]

Why would Feng Zhiling not dare?

[Do you dare to kill me? Do you dare to touch me?] He didn't say it, but what he did showed everything. He didn't even want to cover it!

Feng Zhiling didn't talk. Ling Wuxie and the two ladies were completely speechless and helpless. In fact, they all had thought about smashing him into death many times. [I will smash you till you bow on your knees! Let's see which is tougher between you and my fists...]

However, they didn't dare to. They just couldn't!

What if Feng Zhiling really was a man with no fear for death. He would just die. If he died, they would have no other plans. It was not a good thing for them at all.

What Feng Monarch showed was ‘I am exactly a man with no fear for death!’

Everybody would give up in front of such powerful opponents!

Except him!

He hadn’t thought about giving in at all. No matter what they would do, he would barely give in!

Besides, they didn’t have time to test him... If Meng Wuzhen got to the almighty power level early enough, even if Bai Chen could get back up there with his great status, he would not be able to do anything!

Nobody knew how much time he had.

Surely, one thing could be guaranteed. If Bai Chen waited till the divine punishment ended itself, it would take about one thousand years!

One thousand years was more than enough for Meng Wuzhen to get to the almighty power level. No. Ling Wuxie reckoned it wouldn’t need one thousand years. It would only take no more than three hundred years for Meng Wuzhen to be invincible!

Even Ling Wuxie, one of the strongest among the young generation, was not capable enough to fight against him. That showed everything!

"Brother Feng, look at you. Why suddenly turn so hostile. We were having such a good conversation, like we had known each other for a long time! We were so happy. Why suddenly make it awkward after just a few words?" Ling Wuxie furrowed his eyebrows and spoke in distress.

Ling Wuxie was good at playing innocent. He was famous in the Human Realm Upon Heaven for this. No matter how serious the situation was, he could solve it by a few words!

However, when Ling Wuxie did it, Ye Xiao acted like he didn't hear anything at all.

He was still closing his eyes, saying nothing in response.

He didn't talk and not even move a bit.

"I know you are capable in making Heaven Seizing Dan. I know you don't like to be threatened. I know you don't want to take the risk for it. I think the two ladies have been above all others for so long, so they believe they control everything. I apologize for them. Brother Feng, you are a dan-maker. It is reasonable that you care about the risk. However, we will figure a way to solve it for you."

Ling Wuxie slowly spoke.

He didn't care whether Feng Monarch was listening or not. He just kept talking.

"Brother Feng, you are an honorable man. We can also promise that if you suffer the divine punishment, we will offer anything we have to defend you from the punishment. We won't let you get harmed. That firstly shows our sincerity."

"As for the second, we will offer all the materials you want to make the supreme dan. If there will be anything left, you can keep them all. We will also give you ninety-nine great treasures! Those are ninety-nine treasures that don't exist in Land of Han-Yang or Qing-Yun Realm. We will give you one of each. Those are all that I can get."

"Other than that, I promise we will keep all your friends and families from harm. We will protect them as well as we can. We will let Lady Bing Xinyue free immediately. Wan-Er was being too excessive earlier. She knew Lady Bing-Er was doing it to return the favor to you, yet Wan-Er still kept her as a guest. She thought it was such a good luck to have someone she like, so she kept her. But she really should consider how Bing-Er felt. I will go ask Master Bai to punish Wan-Er."

"Besides, the one thing that we have talked about, the House of the Chaotic Storms will leave everything in this world behind. They won't arouse any disturbance at all. These are all that we can promise you. If you are still not satisfied, please let me know. Like you said, we are here for your help. Whatever you want us to do,

just tell me!"

"All depends on your decision. What do you think can make you help us. Just tell me. Whatever you say, we will do it. You make the decision! It all depends on you. You make the call!"

"What we need are only enough dan beads!"

"Brother Feng, look... I have shown much sincerity. If you still won't even take to us, we really don't know what to do." Ling Wuxie sighed.

[It is so exhausting to negotiate with this guy. I should have let Bai Chen come to talk himself.]

[It is completely making troubles for myself to talk to a man like this. No matter what I do, he just don't buy it.]

[I just promised him everything we have. I have to do this. There is no other way that is possible to make him talk...]

If Bai Chen came, would he be smarter on this...]

However, Ling Wuxie didn't know one thing...

It was lucky that Bai Chen didn't come himself... It better be Ling Wuxie.

If Bai Chen came to do this, the best result would be all of them dying together.

Ye Xiao would have died, but Bai Chen and the two ladies wouldn't end up better. They would also sacrifice a lot. It would be more than one thousand years for them to wait!

What Ling Wuxie did looked dumb, but it was the best way to negotiate with Ye Xiao.

Just to be honest!

[Just tell me what you want!]

Lucky for him, Ye Xiao loved to take the initiative!

However, not everybody could take the initiative in all circumstances!

...

Chapter 492: Three Sighs

It was said that there was no man under Human Realm Upon Heavens he couldn't persuade. That was so true!

He did it again!

Ye Xiao finally opened his eyes. He stared at Ling Wuxie for a long time before he sighed and said, "Today, because of you, Brother Ling, I give in. If you were someone else, I would definitely keep my mouth shut."

"Since you have shown a good sincerity to me, let's just talk for a few more minutes. However, I have to make sure that you understand that no matter what happens, I am the one who make the final call."

"Definitely." Ling Wuxie nodded.

Wan-Er and Xiu-Er finally became happy.

They finally had hope again.

They already had cold sweats. They never thought that Xiu-Er's casual words would lead to such a trouble. She nearly ruined everything!

If it really was in a hopeless situation, they would have been the

one who ruined their master's life!

That was an unforgivable sin. Even if they were punished to death ten thousand times, it wouldn't be enough to stop them from being regretful!

Ling Wuxie had been giving out all they could like crazy. He had given Feng Monarch all the initiative. They had thought about stopping him many times, yet they didn't. They realized that although what Ling Wuxie did seemed dumb and stupid, he successfully made Feng Monarch talk. No matter how smart they thought they were, they did nothing useful so far!

That was right. They were here to ask for help. It was not a wise move to forcibly try to keep the initiative. It might still work if they were dealing with others, but they were talking to Feng Zhiling, such a proud man. The only result they could reach was failure!

Ling Wuxie might look too humble and stupid, but what he proposed wouldn't really cost them a lot!

Not at all!

They would go collect as many materials as they could no matter how. To solve the dan divine punishment for Feng Zhiling was something they had planned to do. They were more afraid than Feng Zhiling himself for his death. To free Bing Xinyue and protect his friends and families were the least difficult things they could offer. The House of the Chaotic Storms retreating from the martial

world? They were already leaving this realm. Even if there were people weeping for their departure and begging for their stay, they wouldn't stay!

What Ling Wuxie promised were all easy things, except two things. One thing was the promise of the ninety-nine treasures, and the other was to let Feng Zhiling ask for whatever he wanted. The former one was priceless, but compared to Master Bai's health, it meant nothing to them. The latter one seemed hard to give, but in their eyes, Feng Zhiling was just a local man in Land of Han-Yang. They thought that he wouldn't know anything that was hard for them to get. In their minds, Feng Zhiling was a man who would never break the limitation of Qing-Yun Realm! [How hard would it be to get what he could think of?]

To think this way, they realized Lord Ling had done a wise move to give out the initiative!

The two ladies finally thought it through. They started to think that Ling Wuxie was a very wise man. He must have been playing a fool all the time. That was reasonable. How would he be any ordinary, such a close friend to their master!

"First of all, safety. Lord Ling said it..." Ye Xiao blandly spoke, "I need to be sure how many things you can give me or do for me to defend the divine punishment. How much could these things defend? Fifty percent? Eighty? Or completely!"

"This is the most important thing. If you can't help me defend even fifty percent of it, let's just end the conversation before it wastes more of our time."

Ye Xiao spoke seriously.

Dan divine punishment would never happen, in fact.

As long as there were enough materials, he would get the dan beads directly out from inside the Space. What divine punishment would befall on him?

However, he wouldn't turn down such a good chance to get more treasures. He wanted to ask for better, ask for more.

Things that could defend divine punishment must be rather valuable. To deal with the divine punishment for fifty supreme dan beads, that would be dozens of treasures they needed to offer... Only fools would turn it down!

With such an amount of treasures, he would be like having dozens of lives!

For Ye Xiao, it was such a great thing that they asked him to make Heaven Seizing Dan. Ye Xiao was quite happy about it. He wouldn't really turn hostile to them. When he heard that the House of the Chaotic Storms was leaving, he was so happy. He wished they could leave right away the next day; in fact, it was better if they already left today!

No matter how happy he felt, he couldn't show it to them!

This... This might be the only chance he could get in all his lives!

If he didn't get as much as he could this time, he wouldn't forgive himself.

Ling Wuxie hesitated when he heard Feng Monarch.

Wan of the Clouds and Xiu of the Heavens realized that they had the chance to make the deal, so they felt really happy.

However, they sighed in their hearts. They had given all initiative to Feng Zhiling for such a chance. They simply let Feng Zhiling ask for whatever he wanted.

The House of the Chaotic Storms, which had always been fearful and arrogant in the world for centuries, had actually become a meat in the plate, to be cut and eaten as others wished!

They couldn't even resist or fight back!

"Sigh..." Feng Monarch had occupied the absolute higher position in this negotiation, yet he sighed after thinking for a long while.

The sigh had a deep sense of unwillingness. He sounded like all miserable things in the world had happened on him at the same time, and he could do nothing but accept the suffering.

After he sighed, he frowned and looked ahead without saying a

word for a long time. After a while, he finally moved his lips. People all wanted to see what he was about to say, yet he only sighed again.

It was even more like moaning and complaining than the last one!

Ten times, hundred times, thousand times, ten thousand times more!

People would want to sigh too when they heard him.

Only those who was about to die with worry could sigh like this.

"Brother Feng, why so worried? Let's just talk frankly. Anything we can do. Just tell me!" Ling Wuxie had to ask him. He had to be the guy who led the main character to say his lines.

Neither Wan-Er nor Xiu-Er could properly do it.

Moreover, if there were still nobody talking, Feng Monarch might open his mouth again and give a long sigh for the third time...

[Please don't sigh anymore.]

[My heart... is going to break down from your sigh.]

[Not that I feel you... I am just helpless...]

...

Chapter 493: It Is Difficult...

"Sigh..."

Feng Monarch's third sigh was still full of moans. It was a sigh that seemed to have lasted for a long time.

Ling Wuxie was freaking out.

[I fxcking hate people sighing...]

He felt that he was going to break down. He had been a foolish and arrogant young man since he was a little boy. His family thought that he was useless, so they scold him from time to time... When they did, Ling Wuxie's mother would sigh just like this in front of him.

She would look at him helplessly, sighing with moans and complaint. It sounded exactly the same as Feng Monarch now in Ling Wuxie's mind.

However, he was just having an illusion of putting the two kinds of sigh together!

He had felt the painful heart of his mother when his mother sighed in front of him.

He would try to make changes, put it all together, just so to make

his mother happy... However, after some time, he would become that young stupid man again. And then he would hear the sigh again...

Time after time, it built a natural reflection in his heart. As long as he heard sighs with sorrow, he would tremble. He would feel guilty. No matter what great things he had done, he would feel like he was a terrible man living in the world! He would feel bad about himself! He would want to bow and repent from his sin!

However, he had never thought that in this low class realm that was a million miles away from his mother, he would hear the sigh that drove him crazy.

[What the hell is this going on?]

Ling Wuxie nearly teared out.

[My god... Just leave me be.

I am already a million miles away from home...

It is not easy for me...]

"Brother Feng, can you just stop sighing? Let's just talk, shall we?" Ling Wuxie was trembling. He stared at Ye Xiao and made a decision. If Feng Monarch kept sighing, he would flee away. [I will leave all this sh*t to Bai Chen himself. It will cost me too much to get a psychological disease in this low realm... I will become a joke

back there...]

"Sigh. I don't want to sigh." Ye Xiao spoke with sorrow, "Brother Ling, you are not a dan-maker, so you don't understand."

Ling Wuxie nodded. [As long as you don't sigh again.] He said, "I am not a dan-maker, but I have many dan-makers in my family. I will understand at least some of your concerns."

Ye Xiao made a long sigh again before he spoke, "That's good. That's good."

Ling Wuxie heard the sigh. He felt desperation now. His eyes were black and he felt weak on the body.

"Master Bai had been ruling House of the Chaotic Storms for centuries. The world continuously trembled, and innumerable lives have been lost. Mountains and rivers are broken. Whoever it concerns, what he did is a disaster for the world. As long as it is possible, I will definitely send him away. Why wouldn't I?"

Ye Xiao said, "It is to save the world and the lives in this world to send him away. It is such great merit and virtue to do so. Xiu-Er said it easier. Surely I want it. Besides, I promised Master Bai days ago. We are after all in opposite positions. If he stays, we will have a death fight at the end. I have never underestimated myself, but I am sure I will lose the fight against Master Bai. No matter what, I wish Master Bai can leave this world."

"However, to make that Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan is too difficult. When the dan beads are made, there will definitely be a lightning strike divine punishment. With my capability, to make one bead is already my best luck. To make more is simply asking for death. Even though the virtues and merits are right in front of me, I don't have that fortune to have them. I was upset, so I said some bad words. Please forgive me."

Ye Xiao looked at Xiu of the Heavens and nodded.

The situation was under his control. He could get the most valuable things by making a small decision, so he didn't want to ruin it. That was why he tried to be nicer...

He wouldn't want to lose this opportunity.

Xiu-Er was angry. She rolled up her eyes and didn't respond. Apparently, she was annoyed. She wouldn't talk. That showed something.

"Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan is different from other dans. It concerns fate, soul, luck, blood, life, heavens, Yin and Yang, even the Almighty Nature!" Ye Xiao blandly spoke, "Brother Ling, you have many capable dan-makers in your house. You should know this more or less. You know I am telling the truth, right?"

"Urh... Hmm." Ling Wuxie said, "Right. That's right."

Endless alpacas were running over in his heart, shouting. [I do

have many dan-makers in my family. I am not a dan-maker myself! Besides, no matter how many dan-makers my family have, but none of them makes Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan! Pah. They can't even make normal supreme dan! How do I know if you are right or not?]

However, he had said that there were many dan-makers in his family so he knew something about it. That gave Feng Monarch the topic. Now, Feng Monarch got to him along this topic. How could he say no? If he said 'I don't know what you are talking about', it would be making his own words meaningless.

That was slapping his own face.

Ling Wuxie couldn't do such thing.

That was why he had to say yes.

"Since you know it, Brother Ling, things are easier. It saves lots of time to talk to people who are well-informed." Ye Xiao looked happy.

"Heh, heh..." Ling Wuxie smiled. He felt his muscle on the face turn stiff.

[What the fxck do I know? I don't fxcking know anything!]

"The purpose of making Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan is to break the Jing and Mai of the divine punishment. There are a few

problems with it. First, to be against the almighty nature; second, to be against all the souls that died these years; third, to go against the fate of the entire world; fourth..."

Ye Xiao looked serious. He explained word by word, trying to make it clear. At last, he said, "One Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan bead won't get me killed in divine punishment, but it will hurt me badly. If I make more than one, I will be risking my life. I have to be very careful, and you... Heh, heh. Before I make enough dan beads for you, you won't just leave me to my doom, right?!"

Ling Wuxie was shocked. "Please be relaxed. As I said, we will take care of that. We can save your life for sure. We will protect you with all the treasures we have to defend that divine punishment. You will be safe!"

Ye Xiao smiled with profound eyes. "Heh, heh."

...

Chapter 494: Extortion!

"Heh, heh?" Ling Wuxie was freaking out about Ye Xiao's smile. "What do you mean heh, heh?"

"Heh, heh." Ye Xiao casually answered, "Heh, heh means heh, heh."

"So you don't believe me? You still suspect me?" Ling Wuxie said with anger.

"Please tell me, Brother Ling. How do I believe it? How can I not suspect?" Ye Xiao blandly spoke, "Dan divine punishment means being stricken by lightning and the soul being destroyed. Who can actually resist the lightning strikes and survive? That is just impossible. Even me with my great dan-making capability, I will be seriously injured under the strikes. Brother Ling, do you know a better dan-maker than me?"

Ling Wuxie was shocked. He said, "I don't know a better dan-maker. Even if I do, he wouldn't be here now. However... The point here is how to defend the lightning... That is normal to defend lightning, isn't it? I nearly see people fighting against the lightning strike everyday... How come... You..."

"What?" Ye Xiao opened his eyes widely, acting like he was astonished. "What did you just say? Everyday? Someone resisting the lightning strikes?"

Ling Wuxie nodded.

Now, he wanted to make that kind of sigh instead.

[What a nerd. Such a nerd. I finally know how dumb a nerd can be!]

[I forgot that I am in such a low realm right now. For the nerds in this realm, they haven't even heard of resisting the divine punishment. I was wrong!"]

Ling Wuxie regretted. He felt piteous and sad.

Ye Xiao asked with astonishment. But he thought it was so funny in his heart. [I actually have to be such a stupid guy to make the plan go well!]

"Brother Feng, let me make it clear to you. With the treasures from our realm, to defend against the divine punishment in your realm, it will be a full perfect defense!" Ling Wuxie said, "Besides, you are not well cultivated. The divine punishment won't be mutated on you... I am quite certain on this! I have one hundred percent confidence! Absolutely!"

"Heh, heh. You are so convincing, but I don't believe it!" Ye Xiao casually shook his head.

"I don't believe human power can defend the divine punishment! Even a myth wouldn't make up such stupid story. Brother Ling, do you think I am that naive to be fooled? Do you think you can get

me in by just making up some stories? You are underestimating me!"

Ling Wuxie lied on the chair. He looked up to the roof and didn't know what to say. [I totally do not know how to explain it. I would rather die than continue on explaining to him.]

Suddenly, he had such feeling and he shed the tear. He shouted, "Master... Now I know how difficult it was for you to teach me..."

"Feng Monarch, you don't understand. You can't see the marvelousness in it. You are not well informed. That is reasonable. We are in different position and different realms. We have different experience. To defend the lightning strikes by the power of man alone is real. To use one thing to stop the lightning is real. That is not a strange thing."

Xiu of the Heavens spoke with a deep voice.

Xiu and Feng Monarch had met many times. She suspected that Feng Monarch was playing!

In fact, she was ninety percent certain that Feng Monarch was playing. She just couldn't say it now.

It would ruin the conversation again if she did.

She broke it once, so now even though she knew Feng Monarch was playing, she had to let him do it!

"I don't believe it! I won't!" Feng Monarch was being stubborn. He shook his head. "I don't!"

Xiu-Er was helpless and angry.

"Brother Feng, just say it. What can make you believe it?" Ling Wuxie spoke weakly.

"It doesn't prove it true to just speak. How can I believe it if I don't see it with my own eyes?"

Ye Xiao said, "And it has to be me getting through such miracle. Only after that will I believe that I won't need to fear the divine punishment as long as I have the treasures you give me."

Ling Wuxie was speechless.

So were Wan of the Clouds and Xiu of the Heavens.

Finally, Feng Monarch revealed his true face. He just wanted this.

This was what he planned for.

He was planning to get a treasure that could defend from the lightning strikes!

A treasure that could do it wasn't really that difficult to get. Ling Wuxie could get it himself. He could even give Ye Xiao several of it.

However, Ling Wuxie was saying that he would use the treasures to defend the lightning strikes for Feng Monarch.

Feng Zhiling wanted to do it himself! That means the treasure had to be more powerful than what Ling Wuxie needed.

A high level cultivator could use low class treasure against the lightning strikes. That was normal. However, for low level cultivators, the treasure couldn't be in high levels.

Feng Monarch was so lame in cultivation. He was next to rubbish. He could never drive the treasure to defend the lightning strikes.

Surely, there was something that even weak like him could use to defend the divine punishment. It had to be a treasure that could automatically activate a defensive shield!

Besides, it had to fit Feng Monarch's Mai. Otherwise, he wouldn't be able to use it like it was his arm!

Such treasure would be one of the top treasures even in the Human Realm Upon Heavens!

That was indeed difficult, but not so difficult for Ling Wuxie. He had such treasure with him at the moment. However, there was a problem for him. What was it?

The difficult thing was that the treasure had already recognized its owner. It had to be merged with the owner's spiritually. Only when the owner and the treasure merged together would the treasure work.

In other words, Feng Monarch was asking for a treasure that would be merged to his soul and would never leave him.

It would become his own!

He just wanted to snatch it.

If it was merged, once dan beads were made, this treasure would totally become Feng Monarch's. Nobody could take it.

That meant Ling Wuxie would have to give it to him, whether he liked it or not.

Chapter 495: Golden Soul Tower!

The worse thing for Ling Wuxie was that it wouldn't be treated as a gift to Feng Monarch even though they had to give it to him. Because when that day came, Feng Monarch would definitely say, 'I never asked for it. You cannot take it back. I don't owe you anything, do I? Alright. I don't owe you anything, but you owe me a huge one! What are you going to do to return the favor?'

Such thing would definitely happen!

Ling Wuxie didn't know Feng Monarch for a long time, but he knew the personality of him, shameless and cunning. He knew Feng Monarch would definitely act like that.

Since he and the two ladies were already aware of his personality, they nearly spat out blood when they thought of it.

Ling Wuxie gritted his teeth and said, "Feng Monarch, do you know how many of that treasure you are talking about exist in the Human Realm Upon Heavens?"

Ling Wuxie felt pain in the heart; he was the only person who had such a thing among the three of them... If somebody had to give it away, it had to be him. That meant he was the one who would lose something here.

"Why should I know? I believe there is none. I don't believe there is something that magical. However, if I can't have something that can protect me from that bloody lightning, I won't risk my life to

make those dan beads for you. You understand me, Brother Ling."

Ye Xiao spoke casually.

Ling Wuxie was shocked.

[That is straight!]

[I understand. Of course I understand. I wish I don't!]

Wan of the Clouds softly spoke, "Lord Ling, in fact, Feng Monarch is not asking much from us... Besides, a treasure that can defend the lightning is merely a piece of cake for Lord Ling..."

What she meant was, [Come on. Ling Wuxie, such a great figure, surely you have lots of treasure with you. Just give him one thing and everything is solved!]

Wan of that Cloud's thought was good, but she was overestimating Ling Wuxie!

Ling Wuxie wanted to weep.

[I surely want to just pick up some thing to deal with him. I don't casually have one! My passion for cleanliness and purity... I threw away the cheap things.

Things I have now with me are all top classed! Top of the tops!

Do you understand top of the tops?

Do you understand? Things I have now are brilliant treasures even in Human Realm Upon Heavens!

Each one of these treasures can make a big wave in the Human Realm Upon Heavens by showing up!

Now you want me to give one to... a stupid man... from the low realm... who doesn't even believe the lightning can be defended...

And I have to give it for nothing... No gratefulness no thanks at all...]

Ling Wuxie had a strong feeling. [This time, I am really going to be broken... Badly!]

"Fine. Bai Chen is my brother! I owe him this!" Ling Wuxie beared the pain in his heart. He said, "This treasure, I will give it to you. Brother Feng, I assure you. After I get it work, if it fails to protect you from the divine punishment... We will leave! You won't need to promise us anything! We won't show up in your sight again!"

"Good! Brilliant! Well said!" Ye Xiao thumbed up. "Brother Ling, you are truly a man from upper world. You are good. To make a deal with someone like you feels so good! To deal with women is

always too picky... They are always making troubles..."

"Who are you referring to?" Wan and Xiu shouted at the same time angrily.

[He praises Ling Wuxie, fine. He takes a big advantage from him after all. Why did he insult us? We are not going to let him say that! I won't bear it!]

"Ahem. Last warning. When men are making a deal, you should stay aside. If you interrupt again, I will have to end this deal immediately!" Ye Xiao looked aside to them and then he asked Ling Wuxie, "I wonder what is this treasure? What is it called? How to use it?"

Ling Wuxie sighed and said, "It is called Golden Soul Tower!"

"Golden Soul Tower? Good name. Must be something great!" Ye Xiao's eyes lit up.

"I just got it not long ago... It is still new to me..." Ling Wuxie's face looked bad.

He was preparing to show off in front of Master Bai with this defensive treasure...

He hadn't done it yet, but now it was going to belong to someone else...

He thought that there would never be anything dangerous for him that he would need to use any treasures. He just took this one with him. He just brought it to show off...

Something he brought down to show off with... was definitely the best one he had!

"So, shall we take it out? I don't like talks!" Ye Xiao said.

Ling Wuxie was bleeding inside his heart. He sighed. He was upset and helpless at the moment. He sighed even heavier than Feng Monarch now!

He sighed with sincerity!

Whoever heard his sigh would want to weep!

However, Ye Xiao, Wan and Xiu didn't! At least they wouldn't weep for Ling Wuxie for this!

"Fine. I must owe Bai Chen from last life..." Ling Wuxie gritted with teeth. He closed his eyes and took out something.

In his hand, there was a small tower with the size of a finger.

Ye Xiao hesitated. "Such a small thing... Can it really defend the divine punishment?"

"This Golden Soul Tower is made with ninety-nine kinds of Star Hearts... It can turn bigger and smaller as you wish."

"However..." Ling Wuxie didn't want to give it away. He was so upset about it.

"I have to clarify something. My Golden Soul Tower is marvelous, but you have to wait till you get to the next level in cultivation before you activate most of its functions. You can only use it to automatically activate its defensive shield under my help. It won't last long though."

"Under your help? Automatically activate the defensive shield? Won't last long?" Ye Xiao looked at it with confusion. He said, "Under your help. Fine. What can I do with it if it cannot last long? I will have to risk my life in fifty dan divine punishments to make you so many dan beads. It will of course take me a long time... How can I depend on it then? Are you fooling me?"

Ling Wuxie was upset. "Hmm. So..."

He looked so sad. He was apparently bleeding in his heart.

...

Chapter 496: Growable Treasure!

Ye Xiao smiled and said, "I know nothing about this thing. If Brother Ling doesn't want to give it to me, let's just ignore what I said earlier. To be honest, no matter how you try to glorify this thing, it is still hard to believe that a treasure can defend the lightning punishment."

"It sounds exactly like flapdoodle." Ye Xiao laughed.

"I truly don't want to make more Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan beads. It is simply risking my own life. I don't think it is worthy!"

The two ladies rolled up their eyes as fire of anger rushed up to their heads. They were not ignorant people. They had sharp eyes. That Golden Soul Tower Ling Wuxie took out was truly some wizardly object. It was powerful, but most surprisingly, it was in rather low level. It was a kind of rare spiritual treasure, which was growable.

Let alone the two ladies, even Master Bai had not seen such rare treasure, yet Feng Zhiling was actually pushing it away. He was taking a huge advantage, yet he acted like he was forced to accept it!

Such treasure, it was a blessing to even look at it for the mortal livings.

Ling Wuxie was upset. "Gosh. I don't know what to say to you now. It is truly something significant... Surely, I can understand.

You grow up in this low class realm. You have no idea how significant my treasure is. It is reasonable that you want to be careful..."

Wan and Xiu, the two ladies, and Ye Xiao were all speechless. [What is wrong with him? What is he talking about? It is simply talking nonsense. Is that a compliment or critique? Is that an explanation or insult?]

Ling Wuxie continued, "... Things have been this way now. Let me just be straight to you! This Golden Soul Tower has great spiritual attribute. It can be activated by itself, and also activated by other great energy. It requires a special source though. However, for the defensive shield, you only need to merge your soul to it, and it will automatically activate the protection mode. The gold crystal inside the Golden Soul Tower is so powerful. It is rather simple for it to defend the lightnings."

"However, there is not much gold crystal inside. If you let me activate it, it will save lots of gold crystal. After proving it to you, it can still defend hundreds of times of the lightning strikes. If you activate it yourself, it will only be enough to defend the lightning strike no more than thirty times. You are weak. That is something I cannot help..."

Ye Xiao was not so happy. [Fxck. That is the only shortage I have. Do you have to mention it again and again and again?]

"If you use up the gold crystal, you will never be able to refill it in this realm. In another world, before you break through to the higher level, you will not be able to use the other functions of

Golden Soul Tower. I have to make it clear to you. It is a significant treasure, but it has requirements..."

"That is not the point!" Ye Xiao was solemn. He said, "All I want is to keep myself alive. As long as I can be safe after I made the dan beads, everything is fine. As long as the supreme dan beads are done, I won't need to use this treasure after. Third times are not so enough, but it is much better. If this treasure really works like what you said, I agree to this deal!"

Ye Xiao didn't say anything like 'I don't believe it'. He realized Ling Wuxie was on the edge now. Ling Wuxie really didn't want to give up on this thing.

If Ye Xiao said more other words, Ling Wuxie might take it back.

That was why Ye Xiao decided to make a turnaround!

Ling Wuxie and the two ladies were shocked. [He didn't believe it, right? How come he sounds like completely believing it now?]

In Ye Xiao's thoughts, [Gold crystal? It needs gold crystal as power source? Hahahahahaha...]

There is no gold crystal in Land of Han-Yang. Ling Wuxie didn't need to say, Ye Xiao knew it.

However... The Gold Space of Ye Xiao could produce gold crystal!

As long as Boundless Space had enough valuable metals, it could produce gold crystal!

More metals it had, more gold crystal it made!

What was stored inside the Space now was more than enough for him at the moment. No matter how he used it, it wouldn't dry out in a short time!

Ye Xiao hurriedly agreed to it. He acted like he was righteous, full of justice and virtue, and humble to accept the deal.

He wouldn't give Ling Wuxie the chance to take it back. If Ling Wuxie really took it back, Ye Xiao would want to cry so much. Ling Wuxie was a shameless one. He loved that Golden Soul Tower so much. Ye Xiao hoped that everything went on smoothly.

Ling Wuxie was shocked. He looked at Ye Xiao. Ling Wuxie had been thinking, [There will be about fifty dan divine punishment on him. My treasure here can only work thirty times in Feng Zhiling's hands. It is far less than enough. Feng Monarch should definitely be unsatisfied with it.]

[Then I can take it back in a reasonable way. Then it is not my fault not willing to give it to you, it is you that you don't want it... You don't know how brilliant my Golden Soul Tower is anyway...]

[There are many fools in the low realms. Feng Monarch must be

one of them. I can eventually keep my treasure.]

[Then I will suggest that we help him defend the punishment with our capabilities, not by giving out our collections. He may be unsatisfied with it too, but as long as we give him more tiny little things, he will be okay. How could he tell the true powerful objects?]

Ling Wuxie had great plans on this. However... He didn't expect Ye Xiao would actually agree and accept the deal!

Ye Xiao directly took over the Golden Soul Tower from Ling Wuxie's hand. He put it in the hand and looked at it. "Gee, how exquisite. Even if it becomes useless to me, I can keep it as a furnishing. It is light weight. I can probably give it to my son as a toy when I have a son..."

"Furnishing? Toy?" Ling Wuxie and the two ladies were shocked.

"Ya. Don't you think it is so pretty? It is a top choice for furnishing or toy. How lovely!"

...

Chapter 497: A Few Conditions!

Ye Xiao looked at it. He didn't even want to put it down. He asked, "Oh right, how to make it bonded to my soul? It is better to see than to hear. I can't really believe it as you only talk so. Let's get it done. Aren't you in a hurry? I don't see you trying to save time at all!"

Ling Wuxie's face was trembling. He gritted his teeth and said, "Bite your tongue! Use your life spiritual qi to drive the blood to drop off from your tongue. The blood should cover the entire Golden Soul Tower. Don't miss it. Use your spiritual mind to lock on it. Open your mind and keep thinking about letting it in."

In fact, he was thinking, [I can't wait to see this prick suffering that pain. Maybe he fears blood. That would be great. If anything like this happens, I can take Golden Soul Tower back at once. Such a great thing in such a moron's hand. What a waste!]

"Thank you for telling me the details. It concerns my life. I don't want to have any problem with it." Ye Xiao acted like he was enlightened. "I see. It sounds so complicated, yet in fact it is easy to get done."

And then he opened his mouth and shut it. - Crack! - He bit on his tongue.

Blood came out like spring water.

As he operated East-rising Purple Qi, a light purple blood came

out from his tongue and dropped on Golden Soul Tower silently. Then another drop after it. One after another, they dropped on the Golden Soul Tower...

"Purple blood..." Ling Wuxie stared at it.

And then he shifted his gaze at Ye Xiao.

He stared at Feng Monarch. Feng Monarch was following what he had said to create the bond between his soul and Golden Soul Tower.

Ye Xiao, who was busy working on the soul bond, and Xiu and Wan two ladies, they didn't notice that Ling Wuxie stopped being unwilling. Instead, there was a mysterious expression on his face.

His face seemed to turn blurry all of a sudden.

He didn't want anybody to see his face at the moment.

However, he might have done something redundant. Feng Monarch was concentrated in working on that soul bond. Wan-Er and Xiu-Er were waiting silently. They focused only on Feng Zhiling and how he worked on the soul bond. They didn't notice Ling Wuxie at all!

Nobody noticed that Ling Wuxie became a totally different person now!

After a while, Ye Xiao had successfully bonded the soul to the Golden Soul Tower. He stopped immediately and didn't go further.

He clearly felt that there was a reaction in the Gold Space.

Ye Xiao didn't want it to be noticed, so he stopped the martial art. Boundless Space was quite arbitrary in taking in special things. Ling Wuxie talked as if the Golden Soul Tower was invincible, but Ye Xiao really was not sure if this little thing could overcome Gold Space's absorbing capability.

"Feng Monarch is truly a talented man. You just get on it for the first time, but you look quite skillful already. Impressive." Ling Wuxie's face was no longer blurred.

However, he talked seriously to Ye Xiao now.

He looked formal.

Ye Xiao laughed. He spoke in a deep voice, "First... Oh. I believe it is not a problem anymore. I can feel that this treasure is getting more and more powerful. With its power, it should be okay to defend the dan divine punishment. So, let's just move on to the second condition."

The two ladies sighed.

Ling Wuxie sighed.

[How cunning he is. He has taken it from us. He has gotten his soul bonded to it. We can never take it back. Now he tells us that it is the first condition. It is only the first.]

[In other words, after this one, there will be a second one. Also a third one, fourth one...]

Ling Wuxie coughed, then he said, "Feng Monarch, may I ask how many conditions you want? We have an agreement already. Why don't we just be frank to each other!"

He surely was helpless. However, he had to make sure how many conditions he had to endure. What if Feng Zhiling had ninety-nine conditions? Would he accept it?

Ling Wuxie now totally knew about Feng Monarch. Feng Zhiling was simply a charcoal dumpling.

It was dark inside his heart!

"Relax! There are not that many. Really." Ye Xiao spoke casually, "To be honest, not only you want to leave Land of Han-Yang, I want you to leave too. I won't ask for anything really difficult for you."

Ling Wuxie was surprised. He could feel Feng Zhiling was being honest. He nodded, "Good. I am impressed."

Ye Xiao smiled bitterly and said, "I have some honest words to say here. I don't know why the House of the Chaotic Storms showed up here. I can feel that Master Bai and the two ladies are after something big. Now that you are leaving, in such a hurry, you must have reached your goal."

"For everybody else in this world, your existence in this low class realm is not fair for us." Ye Xiao said, "I have been thinking about fighting against you. I did try. However, maybe I can occupy a higher position for some time, but I could never defeat you. You are simply invincible!"

"It is a tragedy for the entire world. A tragedy with a certain ending."

"So the sooner you leave, the sooner the world become in balance, in peace, in normality." Ye Xiao stayed quiet for a while and then continued, "In fact, I want to defeat you."

The ladies and Ling Wuxie were silent.

Not only the three of them were silent, even Ye Xiao became silent after the those words.

After a while, he broke up the silence. He repeated, "I have been thinking about defeating you!"

In his voice, there was helplessness. Moreover, there was strong

will of fighting rushing up like fire! There was regret as 'I haven't reach my goal, yet you are leaving already'.

The regret came from deep down the bottom of his heart. It astonished Ling Wuxie and the two ladies.

Especially Wan-Er and Xiu-Er. They remembered what happened after Feng Monarch took over the Ling-Bao Hall. Whatever Feng Monarch did seemed unrelated to the House of the Chaotic Storms. In fact, every move was weakening the House of the Chaotic Storms in some way.

...

Chapter 498: Opponent Is Opponent!

Sometimes, he used other's power, sometimes, he plotted somebody, sometimes, he used schemes, sometimes, he did it high-profile.

The House of the Chaotic Storms had a strange relation with Feng Monarch of Ling-Bao Hall.

Due to some incidence, sometimes, they had to work together. Most of the time, they were against each other.

Feng Monarch had been struggling. He had worked so hard to hold on in this fight.

As Wan and Xiu remembered, in the long history of their collapsing business, every time when someone like Feng Monarch showed up, they would give up eventually. How could a man fight against gods and ghosts?

Feng Monarch didn't give up.

He had been in the weak side, but he never gave up. He worked so hard to make himself stronger. Even though he had to face the threat from the House of the Chaotic Storms all the time, he insisted. He did it! He made it!

Truth proved.

The House of the Chaotic Storms could change the world. They could make disturbance by waving their hands. In fact, they had the real powerful energy restrained inside them. However, Feng Monarch had nothing like that. He still could make disturbance and change the world. How extraordinary!

"Feng Monarch, I have to say..." Wan of the Clouds smiled and said, "In the history, among those who fought against the House of the Chaotic Storms, you are the only one impressed my Master. He is a bit helpless facing you."

Ye Xiao blandly smiled. "But I haven't won. It is my regret."

"But you haven't lost too. Have you?" Xiu-Er sighed.

Wan and Xiu had been thinking in their own aspect. They only saw themselves but not others, because they knew they were powerful. However, at this moment, when they truly try to understand Feng Monarch by thinking in his position, they realized how much Feng Monarch had been suffering. They realized how strong Feng Zhiling's will was!

That was legendary to fight against a powerful enemy like that!

Ling Wuxie looked weird. He said, "Opponent, no matter how far an opponent is, in the sky, on the earth, opponent is still opponent."

Ye Xiao's eyes lit up. He spoke solemn, "That is right. Thanks,

Brother Ling."

...

In the bamboo forest, Master Bai stayed alone. He quietly sat on the wheelchair, just like usual. He looked at those bamboo and through about what he had been through since he got to Land of Han-Yang.

He thought of those opponents he had met, and those kingdoms he had collapsed...

In the blow of the breeze, he suddenly came up with the name Feng Zhiling.

"Wind blows, he descends..." Master Bai blandly smiled. On his pretty face, that casual expression was turning into a strange one. He murmured, "Maybe when you become a great tornado rolling in the world, I will be happy to have an enemy like you. An opponent."

"Opponent is always opponent."

"I look forward to that day. I know you want that day to come to."

Master Bai looked into the empty air as he murmured, "Since the Heavenly Mystery is found by Meng Wuzhen. I don't know what I stayed here for nine thousand years for. Why? To make a shortcut

for others?"

"If Meng Wuzhen is my true opponent, I shouldn't have come to this Land of Han-Yang. In fact, I did. I have stayed here for nine thousand years. In the nine thousand years, I have no opponents. I have been invincible for nine thousand years. I have been alone for nine thousand years. Now, I finally found somebody that refreshes my eyes."

"But I have to leave now. I haven't even fought with him, yet I have to leave."

"Why? Why would fate bring me to such path?"

Master Bai looked weird in his eyes.

Apparently, he realized something.

"Would it be... I stayed here for nine thousand years, just for this... Feng Monarch?" He was confused. His dark hair was hanging down and being blown up by the breeze.

"Then there is only one possibility."

Master Bai stared ahead. He even covered his breath when he thought of this.

After a while, he breathed and then said two words, "... Destined

opponent!"

"But... is it possible?"

Wind blew the clouds flying upon the sky.

The bamboo forest was like an ocean down there.

As the bamboo rolled like waves, he stayed there with clean and white clothes. He looked casual, like he was the center of the entire world.

He was silent for a long time.

Eventually, he lowered his head. He spoke in a very low voice, "When I return, I will kneel down in the Destiny Hall..."

Speaking of the Destiny Hall, there seemed to be fever in his eyes.

...

"The second condition is about the people you captured." Ye Xiao blandly spoke, "I want you to set them free, let them leave and make sure they are safe and healthy... And never ever tell me anything about love. It will only desecrate it."

"We only took Bing Xinyue," Wan of the Clouds spoke in a light

voice. "We won't catch normal people."

She sounded casual but powerful. Apparently, she meant that they wouldn't care about those normal people at all.

Xiu-Er was sensitive. She frowned and said, "Feng Monarch, you said let them leave? Not let them come back? Why? You don't want to accept such a good girl?"

Apparently, Xiu of the Heavens was standing out for Bing Xinyue. To be honest, although Wan and Xiu were in a different situation with Bing Xinyue, they were somehow similar in some points. They were in an opposite position to Bing Xinyue, but they still wanted to defend Bing Xinyue.

Ye Xiao bitterly smiled. He spoke solemnly with sincerity, "Lady Xiu-Er, again, we are only doctor and patient. We are not what you think we are. I am a man. It is fine that you talk about me like that. But Lady Bing is a good girl. How can you dishonor her like this?"

Wan-Er and Xiu-Er looked at each other and found helplessness in the eyes.

[So... the lady who would sacrifice everything for this man... is only in a one way relationship?

So much passion, so much love, so much caring, all for nothing...]

"I want you to let her go immediately!" Ye Xiao sounded loud.

"We will!" Wan and Xiu promised.

Chapter 499: Done!

They had no reason to refuse. Now that they were no longer hostile to each other, they had no point in keeping the girl their captive.

Besides, the two ladies never wanted to hurt Bing Xinyue. They even felt sympathy to her. Especially at this moment, they felt so sad for her, and also angry.

"The third condition..." Ye Xiao looked solemn. He said, "I need two special medical materials. One is the Nine Cloud Jade Ganoderma. I need at least three. The other is Green Heaven's Grass. I need at least three too. With these two kinds of materials, it will be more likely to succeed."

He thought of Zhao Pingtian, so he decided to make use of this situation. [You are powerful, aren't you? Now I am going to use your power to get something normal people cannot.]

Ling Wuxie frowned. "Brother Feng, you know a lot of medical materials. You actually know such valuable things. However, you may only know partly about it. You know that these two materials are in Human Realm Upon Heavens. That is true. However, it is more difficult than you can imagine to get such things. Even for people like us... That Nine Cloud Jade Ganoderma is possible, but that Green Heaven's Grass. It belongs only to Biluo Saint Palace. It can never be found in other places."

"Biluo Saint Palace belongs to the South Heaven King... It is close

to impossible to get it. The Green Heaven's Grass grows too slowly. The South Heaven King needs this grass for his martial art... He has made it a forbidden material, so it is truly too difficult to get it."

Ye Xiao smiled. "If it isn't difficult, do you think I would ask you to do it? Lord Ling?"

He meant, [If it was so easy to reach, why did you think I ask you? Haven't you treated others as morons? I just asked for something better, look at you. You scared?]

Ling Wuxie's face turned dark. He spoke to Wan-Er and Xiu-Er with sorrow, "Listen, girls. I am entangled by your master... I think I will very likely get broken this time. It may not be enough even so..."

The two ladies covered their smiles with their hands. They were gloating.

They were in the same side with Ling Wuxie indeed, but they felt so good to see this guy in trouble.

"Fine. I promise." Ling Wuxie gritted with his teeth. "For my brother, I will do it." Then he tremblingly spoke to Wan-Er, "Girl, when you return, tell everything to Bai Chen. Let him work with me. I have to tell you. This is not something I can handle by myself! Damn!"

"Uh!" Wan-Er was speechless.

Ling Wuxie was freaking out. "Only by he and me working together can we reach South Heaven King's son. There is no other way but only to get some of that material from that young foolish prick. Only Bai Chen has the wisdom to trick that bastard son of the South Heaven King. He can even make that young prick count for him after being set up. I can never do the same thing..."

Wan and Xiu were speechless. Apparently, they were getting used to Ling Wuxie's big mouth.

"Go on then. What else do you want. Just say them all." Ling Wuxie was being frank to Ye Xiao now.

Ye Xiao thought for a while and said, "I need some special metals. Something from out beyond the sky. Something that is hard to find in this world. It may be precious to me, but not so much for Lord Ling. I guess I need to be bold on this..."

"Just take it." Ling Wuxie threw over an exquisite yellow ring to Ye Xiao and said, "There are the ninety-nine medical materials I promised and other special objects. Meteorite, star steels... There are many other things in it. These are my personal collection. Take it now."

"Lord Ling is generous. Well then, maybe some dan beads? I will be very happy to see dozens of the dan beads from upper realm." Ye Xiao said, "Like the Nine Roll Golden Dan, Heavenly Mystery Golden Dan, Purple Cloud Dan... I really like to open my eyes!"

"That is impossible!" Ling Wuxie and the two ladies exclaimed at the same time.

Ye Xiao was shocked. [You can give me those valuable treasures, but you just cannot give me some dan beads?]

"Hey, hey... For Feng Monarch, it maybe easy to get some dan beads, and it is also easy to give them away." Ling Wuxie bitterly smiled. "However, we have a dan governing rule. That is... Anyways, if you have the chance to get up there, you will understand how hard life is for us there."

Ye Xiao nodded.

"Something else then. Just give me something rare. Something that morons like me cannot see." Ye Xiao said, "I like those a lot."

Ling Wuxie and the two ladies were speechless.

[Who doesn't?]

[We like those too!]

[The problem is... you are asking a bunch of those!]

[A lot!]

[How big a face do you have really!]

Ling Wuxie was embarrassed like he was having a toothache.

"Fine. I will take care of that."

Ling Wuxie was straightforward. He just accepted it all.

"Hmm. Good. The last one is..." Ye Xiao suddenly laughed, "Your Master Bai cannot be hiding there all the time. Sometimes, he needs to show himself."

"I don't think he should just wait till everybody else finished everything and he just shows up and take that dan bead, right?"

Ye Xiao's eyes turned sharp.

"We will tell our Master when we return." Wan-Er and Xiu-Er looked at each other and then nodded to agree.

Ling Wuxie bitterly smiled again.

Apparently, Feng Monarch wasn't quite happy about being forced to accept the task. He wanted to meet Master Bai, because he wanted to vent the anger in his chest.

Bai Chen needed his help at the moment...

In other words, he was doomed to be treated like doormat!

"Fine. He can hide there if he doesn't want to show up." Ye Xiao suddenly changed his mind.

The glow in his eyes became unpredictable.

[I am aiming at you. I will defeat you in a bright way.

I won't do it when you need my help to insult you!

That is the most contemptible thing one can do!]

...

Chapter 500: Not Enough Control!

Ling Wuxie was shocked, then he was solemn. "Okay!"

This moment, he understood why Feng Monarch changed his mind all of a sudden.

Because of that, he really wanted to applaud for him.

In fact, he felt a sense of foreboding.

[Maybe my feeling is right...] Ling Wuxie thought.

...

At the moment, they had finally finished talking about the conditions.

"Please, have some tea." Ye Xiao raised the cup with a smile. He looked so decent. This was the first time the three of them seemed to be polite to each other.

They were drinking tea, but it tasted like nothing.

[What a prick. He wouldn't surrender to either soft or hard tactics. He is such a pain in my neck...]

Ling Wuxie swore, [From now on, in my life, I will never negotiate with this man anymore! He can always easily keep pushing you until you fall below your bottom line... And, he will get more and more and more over it...]

[That is excessive!]

...

At the moment, the fights outside the capital were reaching their conclusion.

The two other kingdoms could only use limited forces in the capital of the Kingdom of Chen. Besides, most of the martial force in the world was attracted to the Ling-Bao Hall.

If Ling-Bao Hall was defeated, those men wouldn't hesitate to create huge disturbance in the Kingdom of Chen.

Such a disturbance could easily break down the entire Chen-Xing City!

Unexpectedly, those men were sent away by Ling-Bao Hall. Ling-Bao Hall didn't even really fight for it.

Those assassins were mostly hiding somewhere waiting for Ling-Bao Hall to post a bounty.

The disturbance that should have destroyed the entire kingdom actually vanished all of a sudden!

That was to make the impossible possible!

In fact, Kingdom of Chen had prepared a lot for this disturbance.

Such danger had made the people in the royal house so anxious.

When they heard that the assassins were all coming for Feng Zhiling, Wan Zhenghao, and the entire Ling-Bao Hall, many of the people in the royal court felt relieved. They only cared about themselves.

The entire court knew the truth that teeth couldn't live without lips. Ling-Bao Hall was fighting against the force of the entire world. Even if Kingdom of Chen tried to protect them, they might eventually fail. Ling-Bao Hall had given in all the money they promised anyway.

People in the royal court all just wanted to stand there and watch. Many of them were paying more attention on Ling-Bao Hall. They gave secret orders to their men that if Ling-Bao Hall fell, they would disguise themselves and get in Ling-Bao Hall to get as many treasures as they could. If Ling-Bao Hall was broken, it would be better to get something from it before it was too late!

Only the military side supported Ling-Bao Hall in full effort, however, all the important figures of the military group, Prince

Hua-Yang, General Lan, and Ye Nantian, were all not in the capital. It was too far away for them to reach their hands, so there were only some small figures staying in the capital. Their opinions meant nothing to the court!

The king slapped hard on the table and said, "Maybe we cannot save them, but we can die beside them! Seventy billion is not going to buy a betrayal! Seventy billion will never buy safety for the traitor! I will never sell the honor of a kingdom for seventy billion!"

"I can't be embarrassed!"

The king said so to the entire court!

The king's words was like a hammer striking down. The officials started to pay more attention to Ling-Bao Hall. As more and more forces gathered in, things were getting out of control. Everyone was panicking.

They couldn't wait to get their men back to themselves, so they sent those men back from Ling-Bao Hall.

However, none of them knew that... those who came to kill Feng Zhiling were completely useless, although they sounded like they were invincible!

It surprised everybody!

Countless assassins from all over the world all retreated within four hours. Such a big issue in the world actually ended within such a short time. Besides, many of the assassins turned around and worked for Ling-Bao Hall!

Ling-Bao Hall, the richest force in the world, for the first time showed its horrible power of money!

The world didn't know all about the history though. If the royal court knew that Ling-Bao Hall's monarch, Feng Zhiling, defeated all the assassins with money, and also destroyed sixty-four superior cultivators of the two great sects, even the legendary figure Bu Jingtian, people in the court would cry with great sorrow. Even if they knew that Ling-Bao Hall did get such a great victory, they would regret so much. Of course, they knew timely help meant so much more earlier than later.

When the Kingdom of Chen was surrounded by enemies, when it was in the most dangerous moment, Ling-Bao Hall provided lots of timely support. It helped the Kingdom of Chen recover. It made danger into opportunity, and victory became so close to them. However, the entire kingdom turned their back to Ling-Bao Hall when it needed help the most. Some of them even planned to take advantage of the falling Ling-Bao Hall. That was not simply betrayal. That was being unscrupulous!

That was how political motives would lead people to. However, morally, it was unacceptable!

Ling-Bao Hall was unbelievably powerful at this point. For the spies from the other kingdoms, it was better to give up the plan

that went against Ling-Bao Hall, so they tried to instigate some assassins to go get the royal house. Ling-Bao Hall was impossible to defeat at the moment, but the Royal House was a good meat. If they could get it down, to kill some princes, kill the crown prince, or even kill the king, it would be a great success!

However, they failed because of the strong defense force that had been prepared for any attacks!

The defense force of the Kingdom of Chen wasn't that powerful though. When the fight was going on, somebody got involved and took care of everything! That was a group of men in black clothes!

Ning Biluo and Zhao Pingtian led the group!

The world's No. 1 and No. 3 assassins!

The King of Assassin!

The Killer King!

And there was the other figure, the Instant Killer Liu Changjun!

For those who were fighting, these fellas were a great shock!

Most importantly, they were on the Kingdom of Chen's side.

Ning Biluo and Zhao Pingtian were marching left and right. They rushed in front like two gods of death suddenly showing up in the world. Wherever they passed, blood and flesh splashed about.

They just rushed and killed. After a while, the enemies were all defeated and gone.

When the royal guards sounded the horn to fight back, everything was settled!

In fact, Ning Biluo and Zhao Pingtian's appearance decided the result. When Ling-Bao Hall stood on the Kingdom of Chen's side, everything was settled!

After all, most of those men who were attacking the Kingdom of Chen were assassins in the world. They were not truly submitted to the other countries. As Ling-Bao Hall got involved, they surely were broken down!

Since the chaos began, the king had never hidden back to the secret room. He just stood there watching the fights in the city. He didn't talk or move.

Beside him there were two superior cultivators who were there to protect him.

Behind him, it was an empty house.

"Who are these men? They come to help us. How can they be so

powerful in martial arts?" The king looked at the group that was led by Ning Biluo and Zhao Pingtian. He asked as he watched with sharp eyes.

"Those two are the No. 1 and No. 3 assassins in the assassin's ranking list. Ning Biluo and Zhao Pingtian. According to the news from Ling-Bao Hall, they both have joined Ling-Bao Hall!" Master Sun stood behind the king.

"So they are from Ling-Bao Hall..." The king looked at them and sighed. "Does it mean Ling-Bao Hall has gotten away from the crisis?"

Master Sun nodded. "Must be. The city is in a mess, so any news comes late. But since these two assassins are here, Ling-Bao Hall should be safe now."

"I... I owe Ling-Bao Hall an apology. I owe Feng Monarch an apology." The king sighed.

Master Sun said, "No need to feel bad. A king is sometimes the most helpless one. Kingdom of Chen is now in a dangerous moment. Things in the martial world is not our primary concern. Feng Monarch can surely understand you. Besides, you have already shown your attitude that you won't betray them. Otherwise, Feng Monarch wouldn't send Ning Biluo and other people to come help us."

"If he cannot understand my difficulty, maybe I will feel better." The king said with sorrow, "When a king makes a decision,

sometimes... he suffers too much loss."

"I have been thinking, that I have put enough power to control this court... but it is not enough..." The king's eyes glowed with extreme killing intent.

Such killing intent made the two great superior cultivators beside him tremble.